A New Discovery of a Large
Country in AMERICA by Father
Lewis Hennepin

A New Discovery of a Large
Country in AMERICA by Father
Lewis Hennepin

A

New Diſcovery

OF A

Vaſt Country in *America*,

Extending above Four Thouſand Miles,

BETWEEN

New France & *New Mexico*;

WITH A

Deſcription of the Great *Lakes*, *Cataracts*, *Rivers*, *Plants*, and *Animals*.

Alſo, the *Manners*, *Cuſtoms*, and *Languages* of the ſeveral Native *Indians*; And the Advantage of Commerce with thoſe different Nations.

WITH A

CONTINUATION

Giving an ACCOUNT of the

Attempts of the Sieur *de la SALLE* upon the Mines of St. *Barbe*, &c. The Taking of *Quebec* by the *Engliſh*; With the Advantages of a ſhorter Cut to *China* and *Japan*.

Both Illuſtrated with *Maps*, and *Figures*; and Dedicated to His Majeſty King *WILLIAM*.

By *L. Hennepin* now Reſident in *Holland*.

To which are added, Several *New Diſcoveries* in *North-America*, not Publiſh'd In the *French* Edition.

LONDON, Printed by for *Henry Bonwicke*, at the *Red Lion* in St. *Paul's* Church-Yard. 1699.

F 352
.H754

145689

K. K. June 29/10

TO

His moſt Excellent Majeſty

WILLIAM III.

King of *Great Britain, &c.*

SIR,

THis Account of the greateſt *Diſcovery* that has been made in this Age, of ſeveral Large Counteries, ſituate between the *Frozen Sea* and *New Mexico*, I make bold humbly to Dedicate to your Majeſty. Having liv'd Eleven Years in the *Northern America*, I have had an Opportunity to penetrate farther into that Unknown Continent than any before me; wherein I have diſcover'd New Countries, which may be juſtly call'd the *Delights of that New World.*

They are larger than *Europe*, water'd with an infinite number of fine Rivers, the Courſe of one of which is above 800 Leagues long, ſtock'd with all ſorts of harmleſs Beaſts, and other Things neceſſary for the Conveniency of Life; and bleſs'd with ſo mild a Temperature of Air, that nothing is there wanting to lay the Foundation of one of the Greateſt Empires in the World.

I ſhould think my ſelf very happy, and ſufficiently rewarded for my Laborious Travels, if they could any ways contribute to make thoſe Countries better known, under the Glorious Name of *your* Majeſty; and if through Your Royal Protection I might ſerve as Guide to your Subjects, to carry into thoſe Parts the Light of the Goſpel, and the Fame of your Heroical Virtues: My Name would be bleſs'd amongſt thoſe numerous Nations, who live without Laws and Religion, only becauſe no body endeavours

vours to inſtruct them; and they would have the Happineſs of being converted to the Chriſtian Faith, and the Advantage of ſeeing at the ſame time their Fierceneſs and rude Manners ſoftned and civilized, by the Commerce of a Polite and Generous Nation, ruled by the moſt Magnanimous King in the World.

This Enterprize is worthy of Your Majeſty, who never frames but Noble Deſigns, and purſues them with ſuch a Prudence and Vigour, that they are always crown'd with a Glorious Succeſs.

I dare not preſume to give here a particular Account of what Your Majeſty's unparallell'd Valour and Prudence have done for the Felicity of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, and the *United Provinces*; the happineſs of your Kingdoms, and the Mildneſs of Your Majeſty's Government, proclaim that Truth to all the World, as alſo the Tranquility of the *United Nether-*

lands, amidſt a dreadfull War, which ravages moſt Parts of *Europe*. Your Majeſty drove back a formidable Enemy, who had penetrated into their very Heart, and keeps him ſince at ſuch a diſtance, that they have nothing to fear from his Ambitious Deſigns.

The reſt of *Europe* is no leſs indebted to Your Majeſty than your own Kingdoms and the *United Netherlands*; for Your Majeſty expoſes every Year your Life, at the Head of your Armies and theirs, to protect their Country and preſerve their Liberties from a fatal Invaſion. The Allies know and own with Gratitude, That Your Majeſty's Prudence, and the great Reſpect which ſo many Princes have for your Perſonal Merit, are the only Cement that was able to maintain the Great Alliance, in which *Europe* is enter'd for its Preſervation.

Your Majeſty's Glorious Atchievements being a Theme above my Pen,

I muſt not preſume to ſpeak of them; but my Religion obliges me to mention what I have ſeen with my own Eyes, and publiſh to all the World, That I have ſeen your Majeſty *Preſerving*, with the utmoſt Care, *Our Churches* in the *Netherlands*, while *Others*, who, by a Principle of Conſcience, were oblig'd to Protect them, left them expos'd to the Inſolence of their Soldiers, violating in the face of the Sun the Reſpect all Chriſtians owe them.

It is this great Generoſity and Equity of your Majeſty, as much as your other Incomparable Exploits, which have gain'd you the Eſteem and the Hearts of all Chriſtian Princes, one alone excepted; and have engag'd the King of *Spain* my lawful Sovereign, the moſt Catholick Prince in the World, to make ſo ſtrict an Alliance with Your Majeſty.

That Great Monarch being too remote from the *Netherlands* to defend his

his Dominions, has found in Your Majeſty a Valiant and Truſty Defender; who being ſeconded by the Invincible Elector of *Bavaria*, protects the *Spaniſh* Dominions againſt a Prince, who makes all poſſible Efforts to deprive his Catholick Majeſty thereof, notwithſtanding their Proximity of Blood, and his profeſſing the ſame Religion.

His Catholick Majeſty having therefore ſo often experienced, that Your Majeſty's Royal Word is more firm than other Princes Treaties and Solemn Oaths, could not alſo but leave his Dominions to your Diſpoſal; ſhewing by that unparallell'd Piece of Truſt, how much he relies upon your Majeſty's Honour, and what Eſteem he has for your Royal Vertues, which are mixed with no manner of Imperfections.

I don't queſtion but many out of Envy or Malice, will blame me for entring into Your Majeſty's Service; but

but I care very little for what they ſay, ſince it is by the Permiſſion of his Catholick Majeſty, the Elector of *Bavaria*, and the Superiours of my Order. I deſign to keep the Integrity of my Faith, and ſerve faithfully the Great Monarch who has honour'd me with his Royal Protection. I owe my Services to the Generous Protector of my Country, and of our Altars, who beſides has ſo kindly receiv'd me at his Court, while other Princes neglected me, or forbad me their Preſence. It is then out of Gratitude, that I devote my ſelf to Your Majeſty's Service, and in order to contribute to the Converſion of the ſeveral Nations I have diſcover'd, and to the Advantage of your Subjects, if they will improve this Opportunity, and make Plantations in a Country, which is ſo fertile, as to afford two Crops every Year.

The Gentleman with whom I began this *Diſcovery*, had form'd great Deſigns,

Deſigns, and eſpecially upon the Mines of St. *Barbe* in *New Mexico*; but his Tragical Death prevented their Execution.

I humbly beſeech your Majeſty, to accept this Publick Mark of my Reſpect and Gratitude; having pray'd the Almighty for the Preſervation of Your Sacred Majeſty's Perſon, and the Proſperity of your Reign, I beg leave to ſubſcribe my ſelf, with all the Submiſſion and Reſpect imaginable,

SIR,

Your MAJESTY's

Moſt Humble, moſt Faithful, and

Moſt Obedient Servant,

F. Louis Hennepin,

Miſſionary Recollect.

THE PREFACE.

I *Preſent here the Reader with the Firſt Part of the Account of the Voyage I made from the Year* 1679, *to the Year* 1682, *in the Northern* America; *in which I diſcover'd a Country, unknown before me, as large or larger than* Europe. *I had reſolved long ago to oblige the Publick with it; but my Reſolution was prevented by ſome Reaſons, which it would be too long to relate.*

'Tis true, I Publiſhed part of it in the Year 1684, *in my Account of* Louiſiania; *Printed at* Paris *by Order of the* French *King; but I was then obliged to ſay nothing of the Courſe of the River* Meſchaſipi, *from the Mouth of the River of the* Illinois *down to the Sea, for fear of diſobliging M.* la Salle, *with whom I began my Diſcovery. This Gentleman would alone have the Glory of having diſcovered the Courſe of that River: But when he heard that I had done it two Years before him, he could never forgive me, though, as I have ſaid, I was ſo modeſt*

deſt as to publiſh nothing of it. This is the true cauſe of his Malice againſt me, and of all the barbarous Uſage I have met with in France; which they carryed ſo far, as to oblige the Marquis de Louvois to command me to depart the French King's Dominions; which I did willingly, though I ſaw ſufficient Grounds to believe this Order was forged after Monſieur de Louvois was Dead.

The pretended Reaſons of that violent Order, were, becauſe I refuſed to return into America; where I had been already Eleven Years; though the particular Laws of our Order oblige none of us to go beyond-Sea againſt their Will. I would have however returned very willingly, had I not ſufficienly known the Malice of M. la Salle, who would have expoſed me, to make me periſh, as he did one of the Men who accompanyed me in my Diſcovery. God knows, that I am ſorry for his Unfortunate Death; but the Judgments of the Almighty are always juſt, for that Gentleman was killed by one of his own Men, who were at laſt ſenſible that he expoſed them to viſible Dangers, without any Neceſſity, and for his private Deſigns.

I preſented ſometime after a Petition to the French King, while he was Encamped at Harlemont in Brabant, ſetting forth my Services, and the Injuſtice of my Enemies; but that Prince had ſo many Affairs, that

that, I ſuppoſe, they hinder'd him from conſidering my Petition; and ſo I could obtain no Satisfaction. I continued ſince at Goſſeliers *and* Aeth; *and juſt as they were raiſing another Perſecution againſt me, the Divine Providence brought me acquainted with Mr.* Blathwait, *Secretary of War to his Majeſty* William the Third, *King of* Great Britain; *who, by Order of His Majeſty, wrote a Letter to Father* Payez, *General Commiſſary of our Order at* Leuvain, *to deſire him to give me leave to go* Miſſionary *into* America, *and to continue in one of the United Provinces, till I had digeſted iuto Order the* Memoires *of my Diſcovery. This General Commiſſary being informed that the King of* Spain, *and the Elector of* Bavaria *conſented that I ſhould enter into the Service of His Majeſty of* Great Britain, *granted me what I deſired, and ſent me to* Antwerp, *to take there in our Convent a Lay-Habit; and from thence I went into* Holland, *having received ſome Money from Mr.* Hill, *by Order of Mr.* Blathwait.

I deſigned to live at Amſterdam *for ſome time; but ſome Reaſons obliged me to go to* Utrecht, *where I finiſhed the Firſt Volume of the Account of my Diſcovery which I hope will prove advantagious to* Europe, *and*

and especially to the English *Nation, to whose Service I entirely Devote my self.*

I cannot sufficiently acknowledge the Favours of Mr. Blathwait, *who has so generously provided for my Subsistence, and did me the Honour to present me to His Majesty before His Departure for* England. *I am also very much obliged to the Duke of* Ormond, *and the Earl of* Athlone, *for the Civilities I have Received from them: They have often admitted me to their Table, and granted several Protections in* Flanders *upon my Recommendations.*

I hope the Reader will be pleased with the Account of my Discovery; not for the Fineness of the Language, and the Nobleness of the Expression, but only upon Account of its Importance, and of the Sincerity wherewith 'tis written. The Bookseller has added a Map, and some other Cutts, which are an Ornament to the Book, and very useful for the better understanding of it.

THE

The Contents of the Chapters.

THE *Occaſion of undertaking this Voyage.*

Chap. 1. *The Motives which engaged the Author of this Diſcovery to undertake the Voyage, whereof you have here a Relation.*

Chap. 2. *The means by which the Author accuſtom'd himſelf to endure the Travail and Fatigue of his laborious Miſſion.*

Chap. 3. *A Deſcription of thoſe Canou's that they make uſe of in the Summer-time in* America, *for the conveniency of Travelling.*

Chap. 4. *Other Motives that induced the Author more forcibly to undertake this Diſcovery.*

Chap. 5. *A Deſcription of Fort* Catarokouy, *call'd ſince Fort* Frontenac.

Chap. 6. *A Deſcription of ſome Freſh-water Lakes, the greateſt and the pleaſanteſt in the Univerſe.*

Chap. 7. *A Deſcription of the fall of the River* Niagara, *that is to be ſeen betwixt the Lake* Ontario *and that of* Erié.

Chap. 8. *A Deſcription of the Lake* Erié.

Chap. 9. *A Deſcription of the Lake* Huron.

Chap. 10. *A Deſcription of the Lake call'd by the Savages* Illinouack, *and by the* French, Illinois.

Chap. 11. *A ſhort Deſcription of the Upper Lake.*

Chap. 12. *What is the Predominant* Genius *of the Inhabitants of* Canada.

Chap. 13. *A Deſcription of my firſt Imbarkment in a Canou at* Quebec, *the Capital City of* Canada, *being bound for the South-Weſt of* New-France, *or* Canada.

Chap. 14. *A Deſcription of my ſecond Embarkment at Fort* Frontenac, *in a Brigantine upon the Lake* Ontario *or* Frontenac.

Chap. 15. *An Account of the Embaſſie to the* Iroqueſe Tſonnontouans.

Chap. 16. *A Deſcription of a Ship of Sixty Tuns, which we built near the Streights of the Lake* Erie, *during the Winter and Spring of the Year* 1679.

Chap. 17. *The Author's Return to Fort* Frontenac.

Chap. 18. *An Account of our Second Embarkment from Fort* Frontenac.

Chap. 19. *An Account of our Third Embarkment from the Mouth of the Lake* Erie.

Chap. 20. *An Account of what happen'd in our Passage from the Lake* Erie *unto the Lake* Huron.

Chap. 21. *An Account of our Navigation on the Lake* Huron *to* Missilimakinak.

Chap. 22. *An Account of our Sailing from* Missilimakinak, *into the Lake of the* Illinois.

Chap. 23. *An Account of our Embarkment in Canou's to continue our Discovery, from the Bay of* Puans, *to the* Miami's *on the Lake of the* Illinois.

Chap. 24. *A Description of the* Calumet, *or Great Pipe.*

Chap. 25. *A Continuation of our Discovery; with an Account of our Navigation to the farther end of the Lake of the* Illinois *in our Canous.*

Chap. 26. *An Account of the Peace made between us and the* Outtouagami's.

Chap. 27. *An Account of the Building of a Fort and a House near the River* Miamis.

Chap. 28. *A Continuation of our Voyage from Fort* Miamis *to the River of the* Illinois.

Chap. 29. *An Account of our Embarkment at the Head of the River of the* Illinois.

Chap. 30. *A Description of the Hunting of the wild Bulls and Cows, by the Savages; Of the bigness of those Beasts; and of the Advantages and Improvements that may be made of the Plain where they Pasture; and of the Woods thereabouts.*

Chap. 31. *An Account of our Arrival to the Country of the* Illinois, *one of the most numerous Nations of the Savages of* America.

Chap. 32. *An Account of what hapned to us while we remained among the* Illinois, *till the building of a New Fort.*

Chap. 33. *Reflections upon the Temper and Manners of the* Illinois, *and the little Disposition they have to embrace Christianity.*

Chap.

Chap. 34. *An Account of the Building of a New Fort on the River of the* Illinois, *named by the Savages* Checagou, *and by us Fort* Crevecœur ; *as alſo a Barque to go down the River* Meſchaſipi.

Chap. 35. *Containing an Account of what was tranſacted at Fort* Crevecœur *before M.* la Salle's *return to Fort* Frontenac ; *and the Inſtructions we received from a Savage concerning the River* Meſchaſipi.

Chap. 36. *The Author ſets out from Fort* Crevecœur, *to continue his Voyage.*

Chap. 37. *The Courſe of the River* Meſchaſipi *from the Mouth of the River of the* Illinois, *to the Sea ; which the Author did not think ſo fit to publiſh in his* Louiſiana ; *with an Account of the reaſons he had to undertake that Diſcovery.*

Chap. 38. *A Continuation of our Voyage on the River* Meſchaſipi.

Chap. 39. *Reaſons which obliged us to return towards the Socurce of the River* Meſchaſipi, *without going any farther toward the Sea.*

Chap. 40. *An Account of our Departure from* Koroa, *to continue our Voyage.*

Chap. 41. *A particular Account of the River* Meſchaſipi ; *Of the Country thro' which it flows ; and of the Mines of Copper, Lead, and Couls we diſcover'd in our Voyage.*

Chap. 42. *An Account of the various Languages of the Nations inhabiting the Banks of the* Meſchaſipi ; *Of their Submiſſion to their Chief ; of the difference of their Manners from the Savages of* Canada, *and of the difficulties, or rather impoſſibilities attending their Converſion.*

Chap. 43. *An Account of the Fiſhery of the Sturgeons ; and of the Courſe we took, for fear of meeting ſome of our Men from Fort* Crevecœur.

Chap. 44. *A ſhort Account of the Rivers that fall into the* Meſchaſipi ; *of the Lake of Tears ; of the Fall of St.* Anthony ; *of the wild Oats of that Country ; and ſeveral other Circumſtances of our Voyage.*

The Contents of the Chapters.

Chap. 45. *The Author and his Canou-Men are taken by the Savages, who, after ſeveral Attempts upon their Lives, carry them away with them into their Country above the River* Meſchaſipi.

Chap. 46. *The Reſolution which the Barbarians took to carry the Author and his two Men along with them up into their Country, above the River* Meſchaſipi.

Chap. 47. *The many Outrages done us by the Savages, before we arriv'd in their Country. They frequently deſign againſt our Lives.*

Chap. 48. *The Advantages which the Savages of the North have over thoſe of the South, in relation to the War: As alſo the Ceremony which was perform'd by one of our Captains, having caus'd us to halt at Noon.*

Chap. 49. *What Tricks and Artifices were us'd by* Aquipaguetin *to cheat us handſomly of our Goods; with many other Accidents that happen'd in our Voyage.*

Chap. 50. *The Elders weep for us during the Night. New Outrages done us by* Aquipaguetin. *The manner how the Savages make Fire by Friction.*

Chap. 51. *Ceremonies us'd by the Savages when they ſhare their Priſoners. Continuation of our Journey by Land.*

Chap. 52. *A great Conteſt ariſes amongſt the Savages, about dividing our Merchandiſe and Equipage; as alſo my Sacerdotal Ornaments and little Cheſt.*

Chap. 53. *The Troop approaches the Village. A Grand Conſult amongſt the Savages, whether they ſhould Kill us, or ſave and adopt us for their Sons. The Reception which we had from them; and the uſe they made of my Chaſuble.*

Chap. 54. *The Author's Reception by the Relations of* Aquipagetuin. *They make him ſweat to recover him of his Fatigues. The uſe they make of his Chaſuble and other Ornaments.*

Chap. 55. *The Author like to be famiſh'd. They admire his Compaſs, and an Iron Pot which he had. He makes a Dictionary, and inſtructs them in Points of Religion, in relation to Poligamy and Celibacy.*

Chap. 56. *The moſt conſiderable Captain of the* Iſſati *and* Nadoueſſians *upbraid thoſe that took us. The Author Baptizes the Daughter of* Mameniſi. Chap.

Chap. 57. *An Embaſſy ſent to the* Iſſati *by the Savages that inhabit to the Weſt of them. Whence it appears that there is no ſuch thing as the Streights of* Anian; *and that* Japan *is on the ſame Continent as* Louiſiana.

Chap. 58. *The* Iſſati *aſſemble to hunt the Wild-Bull. Refuſal of the two Canou-Men to take the Author into their Canou, in order to go down the River of* St. Francis.

Chap. 59. *The Savages halt above the Fall of* St. Anthony *of* Padua. *They are ſtreighten'd for Proviſions. The Author, with* Picard, *returns to the River* Ouiſconſin. *The Adventures of the Voyage.*

Chap. 60. *The Hunting of the Tortoiſe. The Authors Canou is carry'd off by a Sudden blaſt of Wind, which was like to have reduc'd him and his Companions to great Streights.*

Chap. 61. *We continue our Courſe in ſearch of the River* Ouiſconſin. Aquipaguetin *finds us and gets thither before us. We ſubſiſt meerly by Providence.*

Chap. 62. *Great Streights which the Author and his Companion are reduc'd to in their Voyage. They at laſt meet again with the Savages at their return from Hunting.*

Chap. 63. *The Savages-Women hide their Proviſions up and down in private Holes. They go down the River again a ſecond time. Addreſs of the Savages. Bravery of one of the Savages.*

Chap. 64. *Arrival of the Sieur* du Luth *in our Camp. He deſires us to return with him and his followers to the Country of the* Iſſati *and* Nadoueſſians. *I caſt my Coverlet over a dead Man. The Savages are pleas'd at it.*

Chap. 65. *The Author takes his leave of the Savages to return to* Canada. *A Savage is ſlain by his Chief, for adviſing to kill us. Diſpute between the Sieur* du Luth *and me, about the Sacrifice of Barbarians.*

Chap. 66. *The Sieur* du Luth *is in a great Conſternation at the Appearance of a Fleet of the Savages, who ſurpriz'd us before we were got into the River* Ouiſconſin.

Chap. 67. *The Author's Voyage from the Mouth of the River* Ouiſconſin, *to the great Bay of the* Puants.

The Contents of the Chapters.

Chap. 68. *The Author and his Company ſtay ſome time amongſt the* Puans. *Original of the Name. They celebrated the Maſs here, and winter at* Miſſilimakinak.

Chap. 69. *The Author's Departure from* Miſſilimakinak. *He paſſes two great Lakes. Taking of a Great Bear: Some particulars relating to the Fleſh of that Beaſt.*

Chap. 70. *The meeting of the Author and a certain Captain of the* Outtaouacts, *nam'd* Talon *by the Intendant of that Name upon the Lake of* Erie; *who recounts to him many Adventures of his Family and Nation. Further Obſervations upon the great Fall or Cataract of* Niagara.

Chap. 71. *The Author ſets out from the Fort which is at the Mouth of the River* Niagara, *and obliges the* Iroquois *aſſembled in Council, to deliver up the Slaves they had made upon the* Outtaouacts.

Chap. 72. *The Author ſets out from the* Tſonnontouans Iroquois, *and comes to Fort* Frontenac.

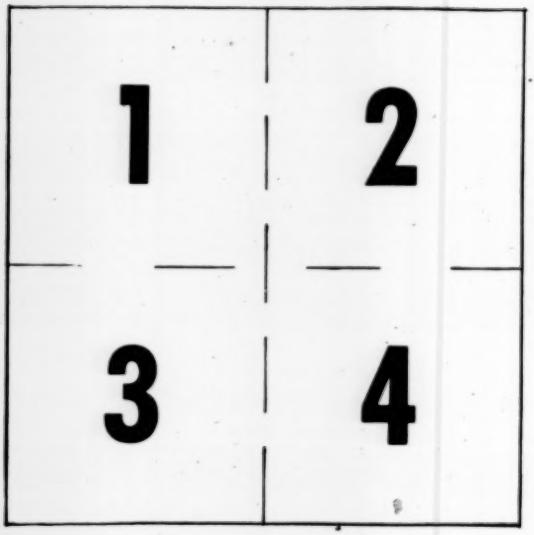
Chap. 73. *The Author ſets out from Fort* Frontenac, *and paſſes over the rapid Stream, which is call'd* The long Fall. *He is kindly receiv'd at* Montreal *by Count* Frontenac.

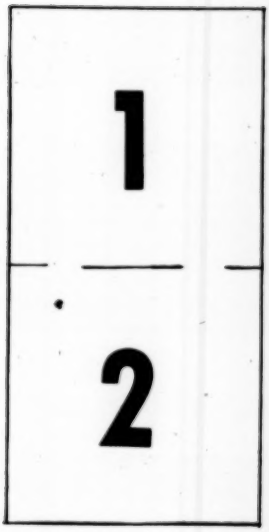
Chap. 74. *A great Defeat of the* Illinois, *that were attack'd and ſurprized by the* Iroquois.

Chap. 75. *The Savages* Kikapoux *murther Father* Gabriel de la Ribourde, *a Recollect Miſſionary.*

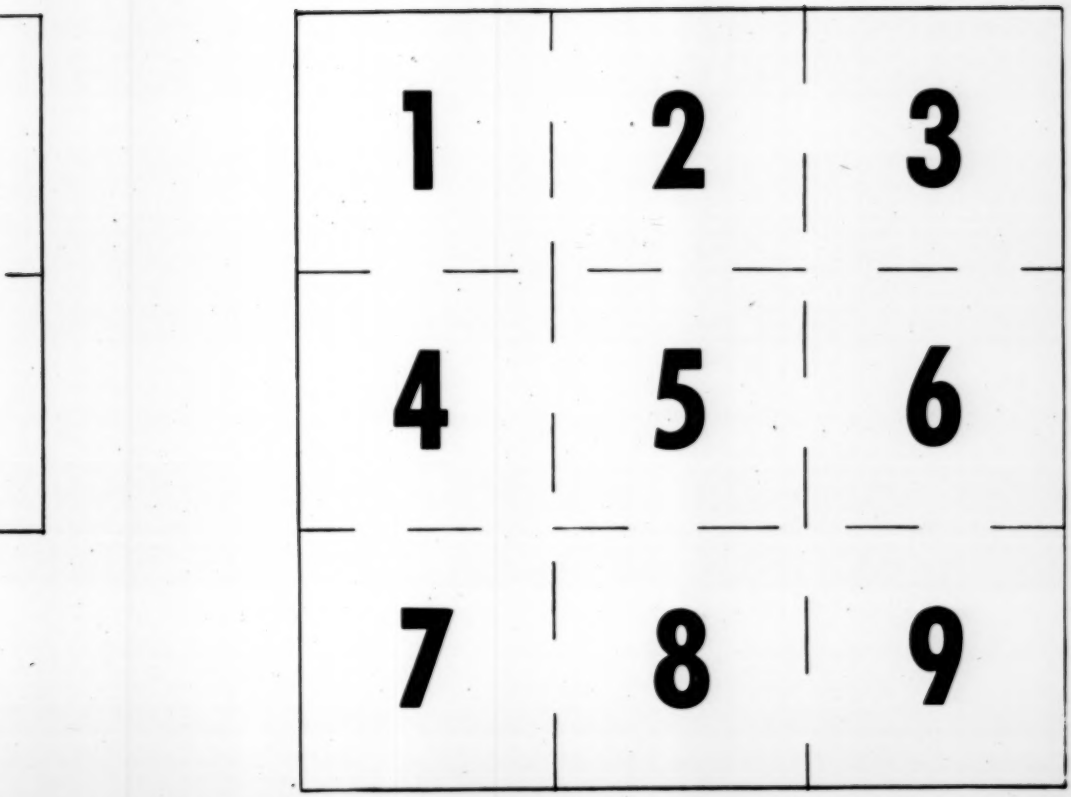
Chap. 76. *The Author's Return from his Diſcovery to* Quebec; *and what happened at his Arrival at the Convent of Our* Lady of Angels *near that Town.*

Maps on this order too large to be
are filmed clockwise beginning in th
right and top to bottom as many fra
diagrams illustrate the method.





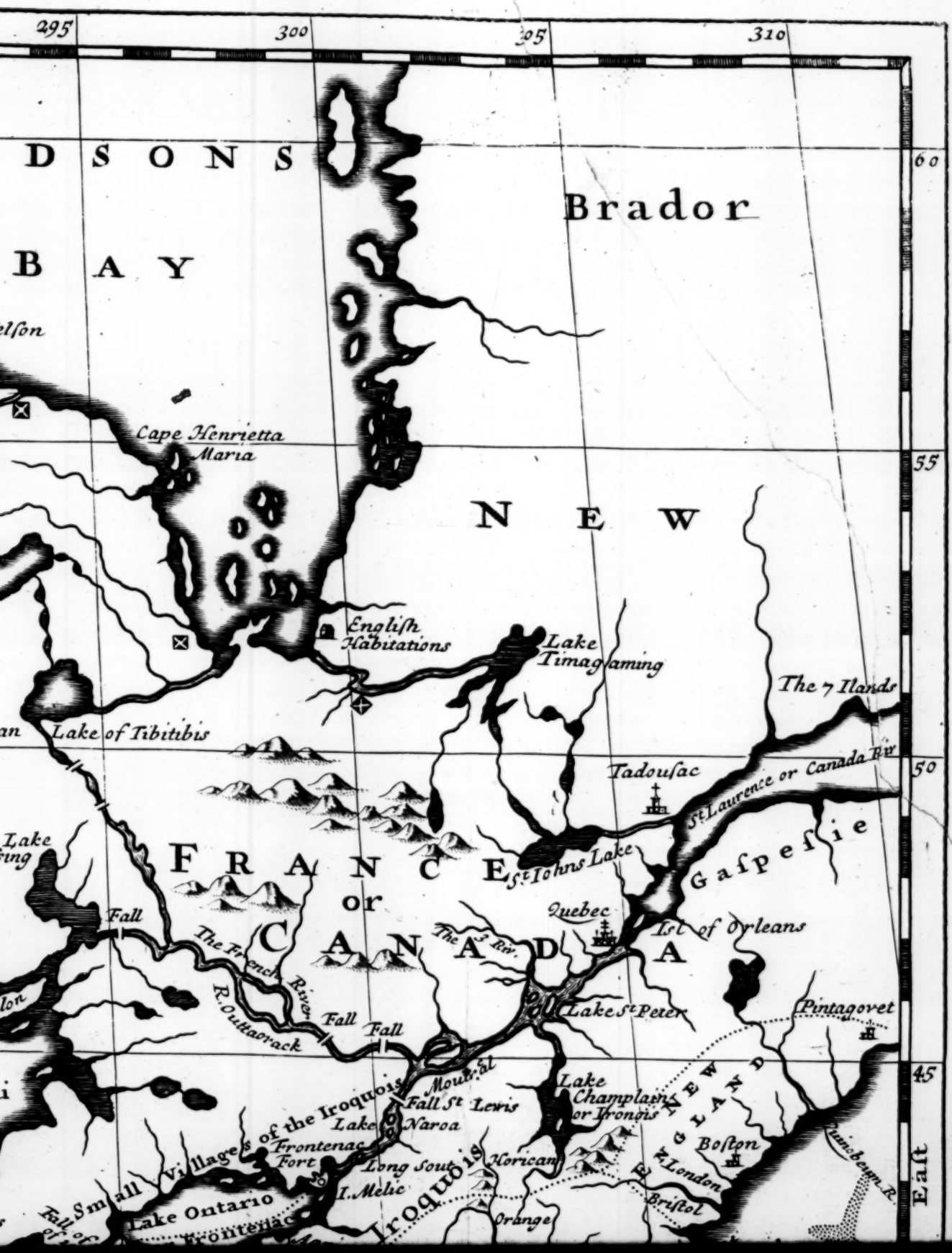
be entirely included in one exposure
the upper left hand corner, left to
frames as required. The following



260
265
270
275
60
55
50
45
West
French Leagues
25 50 75 100 125 150
English Miles
75 150 225 300 375 450
Lake of the Aßenipoils
Nadoueßsans
Iſati
Tinthonia or Nation of the Meadoios
R. St Francis
Fall of St. Anthony
Fall
Lake of Providence
R. of Oxen
Lake of Tears
Black R.
Portage
Kitchiga

280
285
North
290
295
300
HUDSONS
BAY
Lake of Lice
Port Nelson
Cape Henrietta Maria
Lake Piscoutagamy
Outoulibis or Fort to stop the Assenipoils
Lake St Ioseph
Lake Changàs Ketoñ
Accutamiskan
Lake of Tibitibis
Michipicoton R.
Cristinaux
Lake Mipissing
FRA
The upper Lake
The Leapers
Fall
Portage
Outtaouats
Missilimakinac
Cantolon
R. Outtaouack
Lake Huron
The Illinois
Hurons
or Karegnondi
Lake
Cape Puans
Small
Villages of th
Fro
For
Lake Ontario
of the
Poutouatamis
Hurons

275
280
285 North
290
Lake of Lice
Lake of the Assenipoils
Chonsgaskaby or
Nation of strong men
Port Nelson
Outoulibis or
Fort to stop the
Assenipoils
Lake
St Joseph
Lake
Piscoutagamy
Isati
Lake
Changas
Keton
Accoutamiskan
Michipicoton R
Cristinaux
R. St Francis
Lake
Mipissing
The upper Lake
The Leapers
Fall
Lombeau R
Portage
Lake
of Providence
Outtaouats
Missilimakinac
R of Oxen
Cantolon
Lake Huron
The Illinois
Black R
Hurons
Lake
or Karegnondi
Cape Puans
Portage
Kitchiga R
Poutouatacus
of the
Hurons



295
300
305
310
60
55
50
45
DSONS
BAY
Brador
NEW
Cape Henrietta Maria
English Habitations
Lake Timagaming
The 7 Ilands
Lake of Tibitibis
Tadousac
St Laurence or Canada Riv
FRANCE or CANADA
St Iohns Lake
Gaspesie
Quebec
Isl of Orleans
The 3 Riv.
Fall
The French River
R. Outtaorack
Fall
Fall
Lake St Peter
Pintagovet
Mouts.al
Fall St Lewis
Lake Champlain or Ironois
NEW ENGLAND
Lake Naroa
Frontenac Fort
Long Sout
Horican
Boston
London
Bristol
Orange
I. Melic
Iroquois
Small Villages of the Iroquois
Lake Ontario
Frontenac
Quinobeum R.
East

West
45
40
35
30
25
265
270
275
R. of Oxen
Lake of Tears
Black R
The Illi
Portage
Kitchiga
Ocitag
Kikapaus
Oriscousing R
Mischasipi
The great River
full of Pillicans
Illinois R
Fort of Crerecoeu
Otenta R
Massourites
Cape St Anthony
Tamaroa R
Chiquacha
Hohio R
Akansa
Akansa
Ouma R
Coenis
Coenis
Taensa
Hiens R
The Coroa
Quinipissa
Sablonniere R
Mouth of the Meschasipi
Quoaquis
River of Magdalen
Mines of St Barbe
NEW MEXICO
PART OF NEW SPAIN
F L
OF

Lake Huron
or Karegnondi
Hurons
The Illinois
Cape Puans
Lake
of the
Illinois
Poutouataous
Ocitagan
Maskoutens
Lake
St Claire
Hurons
Small Villages of the Iroquois
Lake Ontario
or Frontenac
Frontenac
Fort
Fall
Fall
Fall of 100 Thoises
Niagara
Agnies
Cape St Francis
Lake Erie or of the Cat
Tegarondies
Great Villages of the Iro
Tsonnontouans
Cole Mine
Fort of Miamis
Portage
Erieckronois
VIRGINIA
Pouhatan
Ouye R.
Hills
Apalachin
Apalachin
Carolina
LORIDA
Coca
Chicagua R
Tascaluca
Edelano
Vitacucho
St Mathew
St Austin
Bay of Spirito Sancto
Port Grande
GULFE
F MEXICO
Cape Canaueral
Bahama
Cape Carlos
Cape Florida
Canal of Bahama
Bimini
C. Agnada
Rocques
280
285
South
290
295

Lake of Providence
Portage
Outtaouats
Missilimakinaq
Cantolon
Lake Huron
or Karegnondi
Hurons
The Illinois
Lake
of the
Illinois
Cape Puans
Kitchiga
Poutouataous
Ocitagan
Kikapaus
Maskoutens
Lake St Claire
Hurons
Cape St Francis
Lake Erie or of the Cat
Cole Mine
Fort of Miamis
Portage
Fort of Crevecoeur
Illinois R
Erieckronois
Cape St Anthony
Hohio R
Apalachin
Ouye R
Hills
Apalach
Akansa
FLORIDA
Coca
Chicagua R
Tascaluca
Coenis
Vitacucho
Bay of Spirito Sancto
Port Grande
GULFE
OF MEXICO
Mouth of the Meschasipi
Cape Carlos
C. Agnada
280
285 South
290

A MAP
of a Large Country
Newly Discovered
in the
NORTHERN AMERICA
Situated between
NEW MEXICO.
And the Frozen Sea
together with the Course
of the Great River
MESCHASIPI
Dedicated to his Maty
WILLIAM III
King of Great Britain
By Father
LEWIS HENNEPIN
Missionary Recollect and
Apostolic Notary
Great Villages of the Iroquois
Small Villages of the Iroquois
Lake Ontario or Frontenac
Fall of Niagara
Fall of 100 Thoises
Fall
Fall
R. Outtaorack
Lake St Peter
Pintagovet
Lake Champlain or Ironois
NEW ENGLAND
Boston
London
Bristol
Quinobeum R.
Plimouth
Holland
Malabar
Petenoc
Long I.
Horican
Orange
NEW NETHERLANDS
New York
Philadelphia
Pensilvania
C. May
Zud R
VIRGINIA
Pouhatan
Chesapeak Bay
C. Trafalda
Carolina
Edelano
St Mathew
St Austin
Cape Canaueral
Bahama
Lucayes
Bimini
Rocques
Cape Florida
Canal of Bahama
Tegarondies
Tsonnontouans
Fall St Lewis
Lake Naroa
Frontenac Fort
Long Sout
I. Melic
Agnies
45
40
35
30
25
295
300
305
East

A New Diſcovery OF A Country greater than *Europe*,

Situated in AMERICA, betwixt NEW-MEXICO and the FROZEN-SEA.

The Occaſion of undertaking this Voyage.

MEN are never weary of Contemplating thoſe Objects that are before their Eyes, becauſe they diſcover a thouſand raviſhing Excellencies therein, capable to afford 'em both Satisfaction and Inſtruction. The Wonders they there meet with, are ſo ſurpriſing, and (as it were) enchanting, that they are neceſſarily engaged to ſurvey the ſame with all poſſible Exactneſs, in order to ſatisfie their natural Curioſity, and inform their Minds.

The Condition of Travellers is very near the ſame. They're never weary of making new Diſcoveries. They're indefatigable in rambling through unknown Countries and Kingdoms not mention'd in Hiſtory; feaſting their Minds with the Satisfaction of gratifying and enriching the World with ſomething unheard of, and whereof they had never any Idea before. Tis true, ſuch Enterprizes expoſe 'em to infinite Fatigue and Danger: But herewith they ſolace themſelves, and perſevere to ſuffer all with

Pleaſure in that they hope to contribute thereby both to the publick Good, and to the Glory of God, while at the ſame time they are gratifying their own natural Inclinations; and hence it is, they are ſo powerfully bent to make theſe Diſcoveries, to ſeek out ſtrange Countries and unknown Nations, whereof they had never before heard.

Thoſe whoſe Aim in undertaking Voyages, is to enlarge the Bounds of Chriſt's Kingdom, and advance the Glory of God, do upon that Proſpect alone valiantly venture their Lives, making 'em of no Account. They endure the greateſt Fatigues, and traverſe the moſt unpaſſable Ways and horrid Precipices, in order to the Execution of their Deſigns; being puſh'd on by the Hopes they entertain of Promoting by theſe means the Glory of him who created 'em, and under whoſe Conduct they undertake ſuch toilſome Voyages.

It's uſual to ſee ſome undaunted Men boldly encounter the moſt frightful of Deaths, both in Battles and in dangerous Voyages: They are ſuch as are not diſcouraged by all the Hazards that ſurround 'em either by Sea or Land; nothing being able to withſtand the Valour and Courage that prompts 'em to attempt any thing. Therefore is it, that we oftimes ſee 'em ſucceed in obtaining their Deſigns, and compaſſing their moſt difficult Enterprizes. Yet it's to be acknowledg'd, that if they took a ſerious View before hand, of the Perils they're about to encounter, and conſider'd 'em in cold Blood, they would perhaps find Difficulty to perſuade themſelves into ſuch reſolute Thoughts; at leaſt, they would not form their Deſigns after ſuch a daring and fearleſs manner. But generally ſpeaking, they do not ſurvey their Dangers beforehand, any otherwiſe than by the Lump, and with a tranſient View; and having once ſet their Hands to the Work, Occaſion engages 'em inſenſibly, and entices 'em further on than they cou'd have believ'd at firſt. Inſomuch that many

of

of the great Diſcoveries owing to Voyages, are rather the Reſult of Chance, than any well form'd Deſign.

Something of the ſame Nature has happen'd to my ſelf in the Diſcovery I now bring to Light. I was from my Infancy very fond of Travelling; and my natural Curioſity induc'd me to viſit many Parts of *Europe* one after another. But not being ſatisfied with that, I found my ſelf inclin'd to entertain more diſtant Proſpects, and was eager upon ſeeing remoter Countries and Nations that had not yet been heard of; and in gratifying this natural Itch, was I led to this Diſcovery of a vaſt and large Country, where no *European* ever was before my ſelf.

'Tis true indeed, I could not foreſee the Embaraſſing Difficulties and Dangers I muſt of neceſſity encounter with in this my painfull Voyage. Nay, perhaps the Very Thoughts of 'em might have diſcourag'd and ſcar'd me from attempting a Deſign ſo laborious and toilſome, and environ'd with ſuch frightful Difficulties. But maugre all theſe Diſcouragements, I've at length perfected my Deſign, the Undertaking of which was enough to frighten any other but my ſelf. In which I've ſatisfy'd my Deſires, both in regard to the curioſity I had to ſee new Countries, and ſtrange Faces; and alſo upon the Account of my Reſolution to employ and dedicate my ſelf, to the Glory of God and the Salvation of Souls.

Thus it was that I diſcover'd a wonderful Country never known till now; of which I here give an ample Deſcription; and (as I think) circumſtantiated enough: It being divided into ſeveral ſmall Chapters, for the Conveniency of the Reader. I hope the Publick will return me Thanks for my Pains, becauſe of the Advantage that may accrue to it by the ſame. However the World's Approbation ſhall ſufficiently recompenſe all the Trouble and Dangers I've gone through.

I am not inſenſible of the Reflections I ſhall meet with from ſuch as never dar'd to travel themſelves

or

or never read the Hiſtories of the Curious and brave, who have given Relations of the ſtrange Countries they have taken upon them to ſee; I doubt not but that ſort of Cattle will account of this my Diſcovery as being falſe and incredible. But what they ſay ſhall not trouble me much: They themſelves were never Maſters of the Courage and Valour which inſpires Men to undertake the glorious Enterprizes that gain 'em Reputation in the World, being confin'd within narrow Bounds, and wanting a Soul to atchieve any thing that can procure 'em a diſtinguiſhing and advantageous Character among Men. It were better therefore for ſuch to admire what they cannot comprehend, and reſt ſatisfy'd in a wiſe and profound Silence, than thus fooliſhly to blame what they know nothing of.

Travellers are generally accus'd of venting an Infinity of Lyes and Impoſtures: But Men of a magnanimous and firm Courage are above ſuch ſilly Railleries: For when they've done all to blacken our Reputation, we ſhall ſtill receive for our Reward, the Eſteem and Approbation of Men of Honour; who being endow'd with knowing and penetrating Souls, are capable to give an equal and impartial Judgment of Travels, and of the juſt Merit of ſuch as have hazarded their Lives for the Glory of God, and the Good of the Publick. It is this happy and agreeable Recompence that makes the daring Travellers ſo valiantly expoſe themſelves to all manner of Fatigues and Dangers, that by ſo doing, they may become uſefull to Mankind.

CHAP. I.

The Motives which engag'd the Author of this Diſcovery to undertake the Voyage, whereof you have here a Relation.

I Always found in my ſelf a ſtrong Inclination to retire from the World, and regulate my Life according

cording to the Rules of pure and ſevere Virtue: and in compliance with this Humour, I enter'd into the *Franciſcan Order*, deſigning to confine my ſelf to an auſtere Way of Living. I was over-joy'd then, when I read in Hiſtory the Travels and Voyages of the Fathers of my own Order, who indeed were the Firſt that undertook Miſſions into any foreign Country. And oft-times repreſented to my ſelf, that there could be nothing greater or more glorious than to inſtruct the Ignorant and Barbarous, and lead 'em to the light of the Goſpel; and having remark'd, that the *Franciſcans* had behav'd themſelves in this Work, with a great deal of Zeal and Succeſs, I found this begat in my Mind a Deſire of tracing their Footſteps, and dedicating my ſelf after their Example, to the Glory of God, and the Salvation of Souls.

In reading the Hiſtory of our Order, I obſerv'd, that in a general Aſſembly held in the Year 1621. it was reckon'd, that ſince the firſt going of the Reverend Father *Martin de Valence* (one of our firſt Reformers) into *America*, there had been five hundred Convents of Recollects, eſtabliſh'd in that New World, and diſtributed into Two and twenty Provinces. As I advanc'd in Years, this Inclination to travel did ſo much the more fix it ſelf in my Mind. It is true, one of my Siſters that was marry'd at *Ghent*, and whom I lov'd very tenderly, did diſſuade me from my Deſign as much as ſhe could, and never ceas'd to redouble her Solicitations to that purpoſe, while I had occaſion to be with her in that Great City, whither I had gone to learn the *Dutch* Language: But being ſolicited on the other hand, by many of my Friends at *Amſterdam*, to go to the *Eaſt-Indies*, my natural Inclination, join'd to the Influence of their requeſts, did move me much, and had almoſt determin'd me to undertake a Sea-Voyage.

Seeing then that all the Remonſtrances of my Siſter could not diſſuade me from Travelling, I firſt undertook a Journey into *Italy*; and in Obedience to the Orders

Orders of my Superiour, viſited all the great Churches, and moſt Conſiderable Convents of our Order, both in that Country, and in *Germany*; which did in ſome meaſure gratifie the Curioſity of my Temper. But having return'd to the *Netherlands*, the Reverend Father *William Herinx*, late Biſhop of *Ipres*, manifeſted his averſeneſs to the Reſolution I had taken of continuing to travel, by detaining me in the Convent of *Halles* in *Hainault*, where I was oblig'd to perform the Office of Preacher for a Year. After which, with the conſent of my Superiour, I went into the Country of *Artois*, from whence I was ſent to *Calais*, to act the part of a *Mendicant* there in time of Herring-ſalting.

Being there, I was paſſionately in love with hearing the Relations that Maſters of Ships gave of their Voyages. Afterwards I return'd to our Convent at *Biez*, by the way of *Dunkirk*: But I us'd oft-times to ſculk behind the Doors of Victualling-Houſes, to hear the Sea-men give an Account of their Adventures. The Smoak of Tobacco was offenſive to me, and created Pain in my Stomach, while I was thus intent upon giving ear to their Relations: But for all I was very attentive to the Accounts they gave of their Encounters by Sea, the Perils they had gone through, and all the Accidents which befell them in their long Voyages. This Occupation was ſo agreeable and engaging, that I have ſpent whole Days and Nights at it without eating; for hereby I always came to underſtand ſome new thing, concerning the Cuſtoms and Ways of Living in remote Places; and concerning the Pleaſantneſs, Fertility, and Riches of the Countries where theſe Men had been.

This confirm'd me more and more in my former Reſolution; and that I might advance it yet further, I went Miſſionary into moſt part of the Towns of *Holland*; and ſtopp'd at length at *Maſtreicht*, for eight Months together, where I adminiſter'd the Sacraments to above Three thouſand wounded Men:

In

In which Occupation I ventur'd many Dangers among the Sick People, being taken ill both of a Spotted Fever and a Dyſenterie, which brought me very low, and near unto Death: But God at length reſtor'd me to my former Health, by the Care and Help of a very skillfull *Dutch* Phyſician.

The ſingular Zeal I had for promoting the Good of Souls, engag'd me the Year following to be preſent at the Battle of *Seneffe*, where I was buſied in adminiſtring Comfort to the poor wounded Men: Till at length, after having endur'd all manner of Fatigue and Toil, and having run the riſque of extreme Dangers at Sieges of Towns in the Trenches, and in Fields of Battle, (where I never ceas'd to expoſe my ſelf for the good of Mens Souls) while theſe Bloody Men were breathing nothing but Slaughter and Blood, I happily found my ſelf in a condition to ſatisfie my firſt Inclination: For I then receiv'd Orders from my Superiours to go for *Rochel*, in order to embark in Quality of Miſſionary for *Canada*. Within Two Leagues of that City I perform'd the Function of a Curate near two Months; being invited ſo to do by the Paſtor of the Place, who had occaſion to be abſent from his Charge. But afterwards I totally reſign'd my ſelf to the Providence of God, and begun a Voyage of Twelve or Thirteen hundred Leagues over, and perhaps the greateſt that can be made by Sea.

I embark'd in the Company of Mr. *Francis de Laval*, created then Biſhop of *Petrée in partibus Infidelium*, and ſince the Biſhop of *Quebec*, the Capital City of *Canada*; and now my Inclination to travel increas'd more and more: Yet I ſtaid In that Country four Years, and was ſent thence in Miſſion, while the Abbot of *Fenelon*, preſent Archbiſhop of *Cambray* reſided there.

I ſhall not here recount the ſeveral Adventures of our Voyage, nor the Flights we were engag'd in with the Ships of *Turkey*, *Tunis*, and *Algiers*, who attempted ſeveral times to have taken us; but without ſucceſs. Nor ſhall I ſtay to relate our Approach to *Cape-Breton*,

Breton, where we beheld with incredible Delight, the Battle ordinarily fought betwixt the Fiſhes call'd, *Eſpadons* and the Whales, their Mortal Enemies; neither am I to detain my Reader with an Account of what vaſt Quantities of Fiſh we took at Forty Fathom Water, upon the Great Bank of *New-found-Land*; or what great numbers of Ships we rencountred with, that were bound thither from different Nations to fiſh in theſe Places, which afford ſuch infinite Numbers of all manner of Fiſhes. Theſe diverting ſights were very agreeable to all our Crew, which was then about an Hundred Men ſtrong, to three Fourths of whom I adminiſtred the Sacraments, they being Catholicks. I perform'd likewiſe Divine Service every Day while the Weather was calm; and we ſung the Itinerray of the Clergy, tranſlated into *French* Verſe, after the Evening Prayers.

Thus we ſweetly paſs'd our Time a-board 'till at length we arrived at *Quebec*, the Capital City of *Canada*:

CHAP. II.

The Means by which the Author accuſtom'd himſelf to endure the Travail and Fatigue of his laborious Miſſion.

MR. *Francis de Laval*, Biſhop of *Petrée*, having taken poſſeſſion of the Biſhoprick of *Quebec*, which was conferr'd upon him by Pope *Clement* X. and that contrary to the Sentiments of many Perſons of Quality, who, by means of his Preferment, were fruſtrated of their own Pretenſions: This Reverend Prelate (I ſay) having taken into conſideration the Fervency of my Zeal in Preaching the Goſpel in my Voyage, my aſſiduous Diligence in performing Divine Service, and the Care I had taken to hinder the Young Fellows of our Crew from keeping looſe Company with the Women and Maids that came along with us (for which I had oft times been rewarded

warded with Anger and Hatred;) theſe Reaſons and ſuch like, procur'd me the favour and Applauſe of this Illuſtrious Prelate, he obliging me to Preach in *Advent* and *Lent* to the Cloiſter of St. *Auguſtine* in the Hoſpital of *Quebec*.

But in the mean while, all this did not ſatisfie my natural Inclination: I us'd oft-times to go ſome Twenty or Thirty Leagues off the Town to ſee the Country, wearing a little Hood, and making uſe of large Rackets, without which I had been in danger of falling headlong over fearful Precipices. Sometimes to eaſe my ſelf a little, I made a great Dog I had brought with me, drag my little Baggage along, that I might arrive the ſooner at *Trois Rivieres*, *St. Anne*, and Cape *Tourmente*, *Bourgroyal*, the Point *de Levi*, and at the Iſland of *St. Lawrence*, whither I deſigned to go. There I aſſembled together, in one of the largeſt Cottages of that Country, as many People as I could gather; whom in ſome time I admitted to Confeſſion, and to the Holy Communion. In the Night-time I had nothing to cover me but a Cloak; and ſometime the Froſt pierc'd to my very Bones, which oblig'd me to make a Fire five or ſix times in a Night, to prevent my freezing to death. My Commons alſo were very ſhort, ſcarce more than to keep me from ſtarving.

In the Summer-ſeaſon I was oblig'd, in order to continue my *Miſſion*, to travel in Canou's, that is, a ſort of little Boats (which I ſhall deſcribe hereafter) that they make uſe of in Lakes and Rivers: Which ſort of Contrivance ſucceeded well enough where the Water was ſhallow, or about two or three Foot deep; But when we came to any deeper Place, then the Boat, which was round underneath, was in danger of over-turning, inſomuch that I had certainly periſhed in the Water, had not I taken a circumſpect Care of my ſelf.

However, I found my ſelf oblig'd to travail after this manner, for there were no paſſable Roads in this

Country

Country; it being impoſſible to Travel over-land in theſe new Colonies, becauſe of that Infinite number of Trees and Woods that beſet them on all ſides, which muſt needs be cut down or burn'd before any paſſable Way be made.

CHAP III.

A Deſcription of thoſe Canou's *that they make uſe of in the Summer-time in* America, *for the Conveniency of travelling.*

THeſe Canou's are round underneath, as I ſaid but now, and pointed at the two Ends, not unlike the *Venetian* Gondals: Without them it were impoſſible to travel in *America*, for the Country is full of vaſt and wide extended Foreſts: Beſides, the impetuous Winds ſometimes pluck up the Trees by the Roots, and Time it ſelf ranverſes great numbers of 'em, which tumbling down through Age, are piled ſo one upon another, that the Ways are totally embaraſs'd, and rendred unpaſſable.

The Savages are very ingenious in making theſe Canou's: They make them of the Bark of Birch-Trees, which they pull very neatly off that ſort of Trees, they being conſiderably bigger than thoſe of *Europe*. They betake themſelves to this Work generally about the end of Winter, in the vaſt Foreſts that lie towards the Northen Parts of theſe Countries.

For ſupporting this Bark they line it within with Ribs or pieces of white Wood, or Cedar about four Fingers broad; this they furbiſh up with ſmall Poles made ſmooth, that make the Circumference of the Canou; then by other Poles going a-croſs, about an Inch, or an Inch and half thick, which are very ſmoothly poliſh'd; theſe they joyn on both ſides to the Bark by ſmall Roots of Trees cloven in two, not much unlike the Willows that we make our Baskets of in *Europe*. Theſe

Theſe Canou's have no Rudder, as the bigger Shallops have, for they row them along meerly by the force of their Arms with ſome ſmall Oars; and can turn them with an incredible ſwiftneſs, and direct them whither they liſt. Thoſe that are accuſtom'd to manage them, can make them ſail at a wonderful rate, even in calm Weather; but when the Wind is favourable, they are expedite to a Miracle; for they then make uſe of little Sails made of the ſame Bark, but thinner than that of the Canou's. As for the *Europeans*, that by long uſage come to be well vers'd in this ſort of Tackling, they make uſe of about four Ells of Linnen Cloth, hoiſted up on a little Maſt, the foot of which ſtands in a Hole made in a ſquare piece of light Wood, that is faſtned betwixt the Ribs and the Bark of the Canou's towards the Bottom.

Thoſe that are well skill'd in managing theſe Canou's can ſail Thirty or Thirty five Leagues in a Day down a River, and ſometimes more in Lakes, if the Wind be favourable: But ſome of 'em are much bigger than others. They carry generally about a Thouſand pound Weight, ſome Twelve hundred, and the biggeſt not above Fifteen hundred Pounds. The leaſt of 'em can carry three or four Hundred pound weight, together with two Men or Women to ſteer them along. But the Greater muſt have Three or Four Men to manage them, and ſometimes when Buſineſs requires Expedition, Seven or Eight to quicken their pace.

CHAP. IV.

Other Motives that induced the Author more forcibly to undertake this Diſcovery.

I Was paſſionatly zealous, in imitation of many Fathers of my Order, for inlarging the Limits of Chriſtianity, and converting the barbarous *Ame-*

ricans to the Belief of the Goſpel: and in purſuance of that Deſign, I look'd upon the Employment of a *Miſſionary* as a moſt honourable Poſt for me; ſo that whenever I found the opportunity of a Miſſion, I willingly embraced it; tho' it oblig'd me to Travel more than Twelve hundred Leagues off *Canada*: Yet I perſuaded ſeveral to accompany me in my Voyage; and neglected not any thing that might tend to the furtherance of my Deſign.

At firſt, for a Trial I was ſent in Miſſion about a Hundred and twenty Leagues beyond *Quebec*. I went up by the way of the River St. *Laurence*, and arriv'd at length at the brink of a Lake call'd by the Natives *Ontario*, which I ſhall deſcribe hereafter. Being there, I perſuaded ſeveral of the barbarous *Iroqueſe*, to cultivate the Ground, and prepare ſome Wood for building a Lodge for us. Then I made them erect a Croſs of an extraordinary height and bigneſs; and built a Chapel near to the Lake, and ſettled my ſelf there, with another of my own Order, by Name, Father *Luke Buiſſet*, whom I had induc'd to come along with me, and who died ſince in our *Franciſcan* Convent upon the *Sambre*: I ſhall have occaſion afterwards to ſpeak of him, for that we cohabited in *Canada* for a long time, and were Fellow-labourers in our Settlement at *Catarokouy*; which was the place where we oft-times Concerted the Meaſures of making this Diſcovery I am about to relate. I there gave my ſelf much to the reading of Voyages, and encreas'd the Ambition I had to purſue my Deſign, from what Light the Savages imparted to us in that matter: In fine, I plainly perceiv'd by what Relations I had receiv'd of ſeveral Particulars in different Nations, that it was a matter of no great difficulty to make conſiderable Eſtabliſhments to the South-Eaſt of the great Lakes; and that by the conveniency of a great River call'd *Hoio*, which paſſes through the Country of the *Iroqueſe*, a Paſſage might be made into the Sea at Cape *Florida*.

While

While I reſided in that place, I made ſeveral little Tours, ſometimes with the Inhabitants of *Canada*. that we had brought along to ſettle at our Fort of *Catarokouy*; ſometimes in company of the Savages alone, with whom I converſed frequently. And as I foreſaw that the *Iroqueſe* might become jealous and ſuſpicious of our Diſcoveries, I reſolv'd to make a Tour round their Five Cantons; and in purſuance of this Deſign, threw my ſelf among 'em, being accompanied only with a Soldier of our Fort, who travelled with me Seventy Leagues, or near the Matter, on this Occaſion; we having our Feet Arm'd with large Rackets to prevent the injury of the Snow, which abounds in that Country in the time of Winter.

I had already acquir'd ſome ſmall Knowledge of the *Iroqueſe* Language; and while I travell'd in this manner among them, they were ſurpriz'd to ſee me walk in the Midſt of Snow, and lodge my ſelf in the wild Foreſts that their Country is full of. We were oblig'd to dig four Foot deep in the Snow, to make Fire at Night, after having journey'd Ten or Twelve Leagues over Day. Our Shoes were made after the Faſhion of thoſe of the Natives, but were not able to keep out the Snow, which melted as ſoon as our Feet touch'd it, it having receiv'd heat from the motion of us walking along. We made uſe of the Barks of Trees to cover us when we went to ſleep; and were carefully Sollicitous to keep in great Fires to defend us from the nipping Colds. In this loneſome Condition ſpent we the Nights, waiting the welcome return of the Sun, that we might go on in our Journey. As for Food, we had none, ſave the *Indian* Corn grinded ſmall, which we diluted with Water, to make it go down the better.

Thus we paſs'd through the Countries of the *Honnehiouts* and *Honnontages*, who gave us a very kind reception, and are the moſt Warlike People of all the *Iroqueſe*. When they ſaw us, they put their Fore-fingers to their Mouths ſignifying how much ſur-

priz'd they were at the troubleſom and difficult Journey we had made in the middle of Winter. Then looking upon the mean and mortifying Habit of St. *Francis*, they cry'd aloud, *Hetchitagon!* that is, Barefoot; and did with all manner of paſſion and aſtoniſhment pronounce the Word *Gannoron*; intimating, that it muſt needs have been a Buſineſs of great Importance, that mov'd us to attempt ſuch a difficult Journey at ſo unſeaſonable a time.

Theſe Savages regal'd us with Elk and Veniſon, dreſs'd after their own faſhion, which we eat of, and afterwards took leave of 'em, going further on in our Journey. When we departed, we carry'd our Bed-Cloaths on our Backs, and took with us a little Pot to boyl their Corn in. We paſs'd through Ways that were over-flown with Water, and ſuch as wou'd have been unpaſſable by any *European*: For when we came at vaſt Marſhes and overflowing Brooks we were oblig'd to crawl along by the Trees. At length with much difficulty we arrived at *Gannieke*z, or *Agniez*, which is one of the Five Cantons of the *Iroqueſe*, ſituated about a large Days Journey from *New-Holland*, call'd now *New-York*: Being there, we were forc'd to ſeaſon our *Indian* Corn (which we were wont to bruiſe betwixt two Stones) with little Frogs that the Natives gathered in the Meadows towards *Eaſter*, when the Snow was all gone.

We ſtay'd ſome time with theſe People, lodging with a *Jeſuite* that had been born at *Lions*, to tranſcribe an *Iroqueſe* Dictionary. When the Weather began to be more favourable, we chanc'd one Day to meet with three *Dutch* men on Horſe-back, who had come thither to traffick in Beavers-Skins: They were ſent thither by Major *Andrews*, who is the Perſon that ſubdu'd *Boſton* and *New-York* for the King of *England*, and is at preſent Governour of *Virginia*.

Theſe Gentlemen alighted from their Horſes, that we might mount 'em, taking us along with them to *New-Orange* to be regal'd there. As ſoon as they heard

heard me ſpeak *Dutch*, they teſtify'd a great deal of Friendſhip to me, and told me they had read ſeveral Hiſtories of the Diſcoveries made by thoſe of our *Franciſcan* Order in the Northern Parts of *America*, but had never before ſeen any wear the Habit in theſe Countries as we did. They likewiſe expreſs'd the great deſire they had to have me ſtay among them, for the Spiritual Comfort and Advantage of many Catholicks, who had come from our *Netherlands* and ſettled there: And I ſhould very willingly have yeilded to their intreaties in reſiding there, but that I was afraid of giving any Jealouſie to the *Jeſuits*, who had received me very Kindly; and beſides, I was aware of injuring the Colony of *Canada*, in reſpect to the Commerce they had with the Savages of my Acquaintance, in Beavers and Skins. We therefore, having teſtifyed how much oblig'd we were to the Gentlemen for their Kindneſs, returned again to *Catarokouy*, with much leſs difficulty than we went. But all this had no other effect than to augment the Itching I had to diſcover remoter Countries.

CHAP. V.

A Deſcription of Fort Catarokouy, *call'd ſince Fort* Frontenac.

THis Fort is ſituated a Hundred Leagues from *Quebec* (the Capital City of *Canada*) up the River St. *Laurence* Southwards. It is built near to the Place where the Lake *Ontario* (which is as much as to ſay, the pretty Lake) diſcharges it ſelf. It was ſurrounded with a Rampart, great Stakes and Palliſado's, and four Baſtions by the Order of Count *Frontenac*, Governour-General of *Canada*. They found it neceſſary to build this Fort for a Bulwark againſt the Excurſions of the *Iroqueſe*, and to interrupt the

Trade of Skins that theſe Savages maintain with the Inhabitants of *New-York*, and the *Hollanders*, who have ſettled a new Colony there; for they furniſh the Savages with Commodities at cheaper Rates than the *French* of *Canada*.

The *Iroqueſe* are an Inſolent and barbarous Nation, that has ſhed the Blood of more than Two millions of Souls in that vaſt-extended Country. They would never ceaſe from diſturbing the Repoſe of the *Europeans*, were it not for fear of their Fire-Arms: For they entertain no Commerce with them, ſave in the Marchandiſe-Goods they ſtand in need of, and in Arms, which they buy on purpoſe to uſe againſt their Neighbours; and by the means of which, they have compaſs'd the Deſtruction of an infinite Number of People extending their bloody Conqueſt above 5 or 600 Leagues beyond their own Precincts, and exterminating what ever Nation they hate.

This Fort, which at firſt was only ſurrounded with Stakes, Palliſado's, and earthen Ramparts, has been enlarg'd ſince the commencement of my Miſſion into theſe Countries, to the circumference of Three hundred and ſixty Toiſes (each of theſe being ſix Foot in length) and is now adorn'd with Free-Stone, which they find naturally poliſh'd by the ſhock of the Water upon the brink of the Lake *Ontario* or *Frontenac*. They wrought at this Fort with ſo much diligence and expedition, that in two Years time it was advanc'd to this perfection, by the Care and Conduct of Sieur-Cavelier *de la Salle*, who was a *Norman* born; a Man of great Conduct and profound Policy. He oft-times pretended to me, that he was a *Pariſian* by Birth, thinking thereby to engage Father *Luke Buiſſet* before-Mention'd, and me, to put more confidence in him: For he had quickly obſerv'd from our Ordinary Converſation, that the *Flemings*, and ſeveral other Nations, are prone to be jealous of the *Normans*. I am ſenſible that there are Men of Honour

Honour and Probity in *Normandy*, as well as elſewhere; but nevertheleſs it is certain, that other Nations are generally more free, and leſs ſly and intriguing, than the Inhabitants of that Province of *France*.

This Fort *Frontenac* lies to the Northward of this Lake, near to its Mouth, where it diſcharges it ſelf; and is ſituated in a *Peninſula*, of which the *Iſthmus* is digg'd into a Ditch. On the other ſide, it has partly the Brink of the Lake ſurrounding it, partly a pretty ſort of natural Mould, where all manner of Ships may ride ſafely.

The ſituation of this Fort is ſo advantageous, that they can eaſily prevent the Sallies and Returns of the *Iroqueſe*; and in the ſpace of Twenty four Hours, can wage War with them in the Heart of their own Country. This is eaſily compaſs'd by the help of their Barques, of which I ſaw Three all deck'd and mounted, at my laſt departure thence. With theſe Barques, in a very little time, they can convey themſelves to the South-ſide of the Lake, and pillage (if it be needful) the Country of the *Tſonnontouans*, who are the moſt numerous of all the Provinces of the *Iroqueſe*. They manure a great deal of Ground for ſowing their *Indian* Corn in, of which they reap ordinarily in one Harveſt as much as ſerves 'em for two Years: Then they put it into Caves digg'd in the Earth, and cover'd after ſuch a manner, that no Rain can come at it.

The Ground which lies along the Brink of this Lake is very fertile: In the ſpace of two Years and a half that I reſided there in diſcharge of my *Miſſion*, they cultivated more than a hundred Acres of it. Both the *Indian* and *European* Corn, Pulſe, Pot-Herbs, Gourds, and Water-Melons, throve very well. It is true indeed, that at firſt the Corn was much ſpoil'd by Graſhoppers; but this is a thing that happens in all the Parts of *Canada* at the firſt cultivating the Ground, by reaſon of the extream Humidity of all that Country. The firſt Planters we ſent thi-

ther, bred up Poultry there, and tranſported with them Horned Beaſts, which multiply'd there extreamly. They have ſtately Trees, fit for building of Houſes or Ships. Their Winter is by three Months ſhorter than at *Canada*. In fine, we have all the reaſon to hope, that e'er long, a conſiderable Colony will be ſettled in that Place. When I undertook my great Voyage, I left there about Fifteen or Sixteen Families together, with Father *Luke Buiſſet* a *Recollect*, with whom I had us'd to adminiſter the Sacraments in the Chapel of that Fort.

While the Brink of the Lake was frozen, I walk'd upon the Ice to an *Iroqueſe* Village, call'd *Ganneouſe*, near to *Keuté*, about nine Leagues off the Fort, in company of the Sieur *de la Salle* above-mention'd. Theſe Savages preſented us with the Fleſh of Elks and Porcupines, which we fed upon. After having diſcours'd them ſome time, we return'd, bringing with us a conſiderable number of the Natives, in order to form a little Village of about Forty Cottages to be inhabited by them, lying betwixt the Fort and our Houſe of Miſſion. Theſe Barbarians turn'd up the Ground for ſowing *Indian* Corn and Pulſe, of which we gave them ſome for their Gardens. We likewiſe taught them, contrary to their uſual cuſtom of eating, to feed upon Soupe, made with Pulſe and Herbs, as we did.

Father *Luke* and I made one Remark upon their Language, that they pronounc'd no Labial Letters, ſuch as *B*, *P*, *M*, *F*. We had the Apoſtolick Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and our ordinary Litany, tranſlated into the *Iroqueſe* Language, which we caus'd them to get by heart, and repeat to their Children; and forc'd their Children to pronounce as we did, by inculcating to them the Labial Letters, and obliging 'em to frequent converſe with the Children of the *Europeans* that inhabited the Fort; ſo that they mutually taught one another their Mother-Languages; which ſerv'd likewiſe to entertain a good Correſpondence with the *Iroqueſe*. Theſe

Theſe Barbarians ſtay'd always with us, except when they went a hunting; which was the thing we were much concern'd about: for when they went for five or ſix Months ravaging through their vaſt huge Forreſts, and ſometimes Two hundred Leagues from their ordinary abode, they took their whole Family along with them. And thus they liv'd together, feeding upon the Fleſh of the wild Beaſts they Kill'd with the Fire-Arms they us'd to receive of the *Europeans*, in exchange of their Skins: and it was impoſſible for any Miſſionary to follow them into theſe wild Deſarts; ſo that their Children being abſent all the ſeaſon of Hunting, forgot what we had inſtill'd into them at Fort *Frontenac*.

The Inhabitants of *Canada* towards *Quebec*, *Trois Rivieres*, and the Iſle of *Monreal*, being ſick of their long Winters; and ſeeing thoſe of the *Franciſcan* Order ſettle themſelves at *Frontenac*, where the Winter was three Months ſhorter, many of 'em reſolv'd to tranſport their Families thither, and reſide there. They repreſented to themſelves the Advantage that ſhould accrue to them, by having the Sacraments adminiſtred, and their Children educated by us, and that for nothing; for we ordinarily took no Compenſation for the Inſtruction we gave.

There have always been ſome ſort of People who endeavour'd to render themſelves Maſters of *Canada*, and become Arbiters and Judges over all the Settlements there; for the compaſſing of which Deſign, they left no means untry'd. They attributed to themſelves the Glory of all the Good Succeſs that was had there: They diſpers'd their Miſſionaries over all the Country, and endeavour'd to obſtruct all our Deſigns at Fort *Frontenac*. In fine, they oblig'd our *Recollects* to remove thence by the help of the Marquiſs *de Bonnville*, the then Governour of *Canada*, whom they had wheedled into their Intereſts, and who had ſuffer'd himſelf to be impos'd upon by the Artifices of theſe Men.

I hope

I hope, that ſome time or other God will re-eſtabliſh our poor Monks in that Place; for their Deſigns were always innocent and good; and they could never have been made to retire thence, without doing them Injuſtice. God leaves nothing unpuniſh'd: The Day ſhall come when he ſhall take Vengence on thoſe who did this Injury. I heard ſome time ago, that the *Iroqueſe*, who wage continual War with the *French* of *Canada*, have ſeiz'd the Fort of *Catarokouy*; as alſo that the cruel Savages did ſmoak in their Pipes ſome of the Fingers of thoſe who had procur'd the departure of our poor *Recollects* from that Fort; and that the preſent Inhabitants of *Canada* have upbraided thoſe who were the Authors of that Injuſtice, with it.

CHAP. VI.

A Deſcription of ſome Freſh-water Lakes, the greateſt and the pleaſanteſt in the Univerſe.

HEre commence the Deſcription of the moſt remarkable Things in this great Diſcovery, that the Reader may the more eaſily attain to the full Knowledge of our Voyage, by following the Map we have provided for that purpoſe.

The Lake *Ontario* receiv'd the Name of the Lake *Frontenac*, from the Illuſtrious Count *de Frontenac*. Governor-General of *Canada*. All the World is acquainted with the Merit and Vertue of that Noble Perſon: It is likewiſe well known, how ancient that Family is from which he is deſcended, and what a glorious Train of Illuſtrious Anceſtors went before him, who were always thought worthy of the moſt weighty Employments both Civil and Military! His Family was always inviolably firm to the Intereſts of their Sovereign, even in the moſt perplex'd Times: Nay, I may ſay upon this occaſion, without giving Offence to the other Governors of

of *Canada*, that have either preceded, or are to ſucceed him, That this Country was never govern'd with ſo much Wiſdom, Moderation, and Equity, as by the Count *de Frontenac*.

I know very well, that thoſe Men who aſpire to be Maſters over all, have endeavour'd to blacken his Reputation, to eclipſe his Glory, and render him ſuſpected. But I am bound to ſay, to the Praiſe of that Illuſtrious Nobleman, That for all the Ten Years he liv'd in that Country, he was a Father to the Poor; a Protector to thoſe that were in danger of being oppreſs'd; nay, in ſhort, his Converſation was a perfect Model of Virtue and Piety. Thoſe of his Countrymen who were ſtirr'd up againſt him, by an Effect of their natural Levity and Fickleneſs, had the Mortification to ſee him re-eſtabliſh'd in that very ſame Government, of which their Calumnies and malignant Intrigues had endeavour'd to diſpoſſeſs him. They had engag'd the Intendant of *Cheſneau* in the ſame Combination, having over-reach'd him by their cunning Artifices. Yet notwithſtanding all theſe unjuſt Cenſures, I came to underſtand of late, that they regret much the want of that Illuſtrious Count.

It was therefore in Honour of this Worthy Count, that they gave to the Lake the Name of *Frontenac*, in order to perpetuate his Memory in that Country. This Lake is Eighty Leagues long, and Twenty five Leagues broad: It abounds with Fiſhes, is deep, and navigable all over. The Five Cantons, or Diſtricts, of the *Iroqueſe*, do inhabit for the moſt part the South-ſide of this Lake, *viz.* the *Ganniegez*, or *Agniez* (the nigheſt Neighbours to *New-Holland*, or *New-York*) the *Onnontagues*, or thoſe who live in the Mountains, who are the moſt Warlike People of that Nation; the *Onneiouts* and *Tſonnontouans* the moſt populous of them all. There are likewiſe on the South-ſide of the Lake, theſe *Iroqueſe* Villages, *viz.* *Tejajagon*, *Keute*, and *Ganneouſſe*, which is not diſtant from *Frontenac* above Nine Leagues.

The

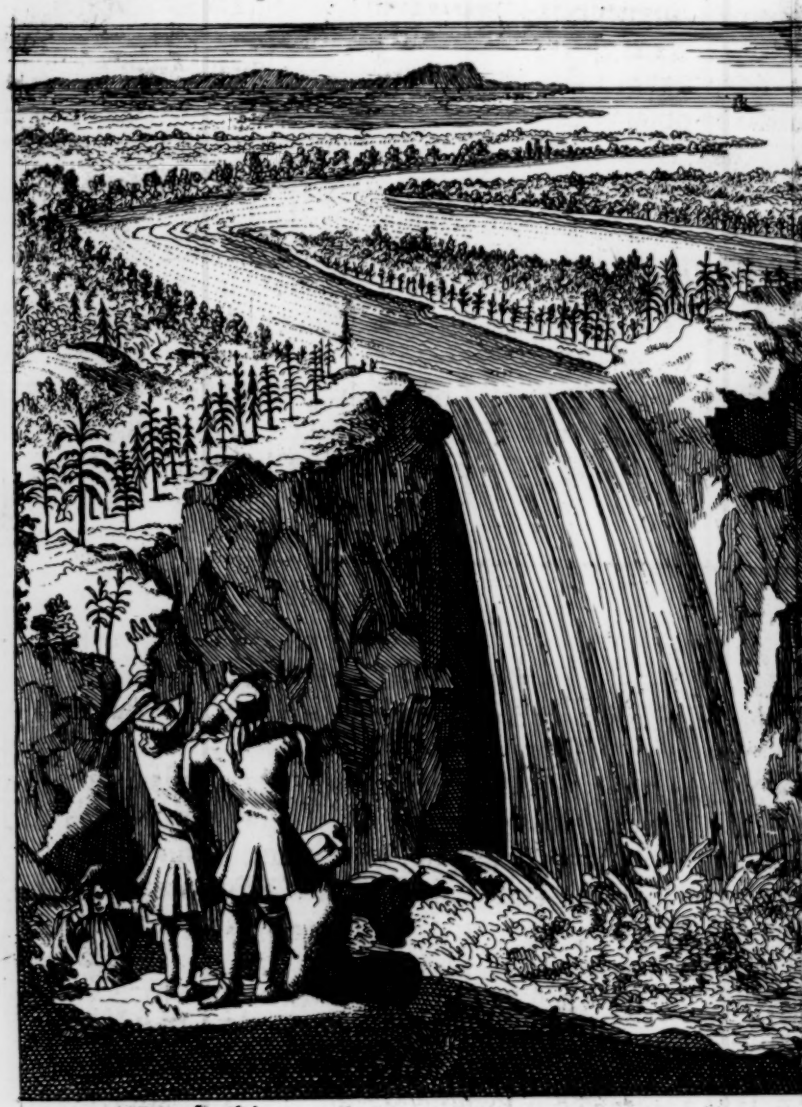
The great River of St. *Laurence* derives its Source from the Lake *Ontario*, which is likewiſe call'd in the *Iroqueſe* Language *Skanadario*; that is to ſay, a very pretty Lake. It ſprings likewiſe partly from the Lakes that are higher up in the Country, as we ſhall have occaſion to obſerve afterwards.

This Lake *Ontario* is of an Oval Figure, and extends it ſelf from Eaſt to Weſt. Its Water is freſh and ſweet, and very pleaſant to drink; the Lands which border upon it being likewiſe very fertile. It is very navigable, and can receive large Veſſels: Only in Winter it is more difficult, becauſe of the outrageous Winds which are frequent there. From this Lake one may go by Barques, or by bigger Veſſels to the foot of a great Rock that is about two Leagues off the Fall of the River *Niagara*, which I am now to deſcribe.

CHAP. VII.

A Deſcription of the Fall of the River Niagara, *that is to be ſeen betwixt the Lake* Ontario *and that of* Erie.

BEtwixt the Lake *Ontario* and *Erie*, there is a vaſt and prodigious Cadence of Water which falls down after a ſurprizing and aſtoniſhing manner, inſomuch that the Univerſe does not afford its Parallel. 'Tis true, *Italy* and *Suedeland* boaſt of ſome ſuch Things; but we may well ſay they are but ſorry Patterns, when compared to this of which we now ſpeak. At the foot of this horrible Precipice we meet with the River *Niagara*, which is not above half a quarter of a League broad, but is wonderfully deep in ſome places. It is ſo rapid above this Deſcent, that it violently hurries down the Wild Beaſts while endeavouring to paſs it, to feed on the other ſide; they not being able to withſtand the force of its Current, which inevitably caſts them down headlong above Six hundred foot. This



Pag. 22. Part 1.st

This wonderful Downfall is compounded of two great Croſs-ſtreams of Water, and two Falls, with an Iſle ſlopeing along the middle of it. The Waters which fall from this vaſt height, do foam and boil after the moſt hideous manner imaginable, making an outrageous Noiſe, more terrible than that of Thunder; for when the Wind blows from off the South, their diſmal roaring may be heard above fifteen Leagues off.

The River *Niagara* having thrown it ſelf down this incredible Precipice continues its impetuous courſe for two Leagues together, to the great Rock above-mentioned, with an inexpreſſible Rapidity: But having paſs'd that, its Impetuoſity relents, gliding along more gently for two Leagues, till it arrives at the Lake *Ontario* or *Frontenac*.

Any Barque or greater Veſſel may paſs from the Fort to the foot of this huge Rock above-mention'd. This Rock lies to the Weſtward, and is cut off from the Land by the River *Niagara*, about two Leagues farther down than the great Fall; for which two Leagues the People are oblig'd to carry their Goods over-land; but the way is very good, and the Trees are but few, and they chiefly Firrs and Oaks.

From the great Fall unto this Rock, which is to the Weſt of the River, the two Brinks of it are ſo prodigious high, that it would make one tremble to look ſteadily upon the Water, rolling along with a Rapidity not to be imagin'd. Were it not for this vaſt Cataract, which interrupts Navigation, they might ſail with Barques or greater Veſſels, above four hundred and fifty Leagues further, croſs the Lake of *Hurons*, and up to the farther end of the Lake *Illinois*; which two Lakes, we may well ſay, are little Seas of freſh Water.

Sieur *de la Salle* had a deſign to have built a Fort at the Mouth of the River *Niagara*; and might eaſily have compaſs'd it, had he known how to have kept himſelf within bounds, and to be confined there for one

one Year. His deſign was to curb and keep under the *Iroqueſe*, and eſpecially the *Tſonnontouans*, who are the moſt numerous People, and the moſt given to War of all that Nation. In ſhort, ſuch a Fort as this might eaſily have interrupted the Commerce betwixt theſe People and the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* in *New-York*. Their Cuſtom is to carry to *New-York* the Skins of Elks, Beavers, and ſeveral ſorts of Beaſts, which they hunt and ſeek after ſome 2 or 300 Leagues from their own home. Now they being oblig'd to paſs and repaſs near to this Mouth of the River *Niagara*, we might eaſily ſtop them by fair means in time of Peace, or by open force in time of War; and thus oblige them to turn their Commerce upon *Canada*.

But having obſerv'd that the *Iroqueſe* were puſh'd on to ſtop the Execution of this Deſign, not ſo much by the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, as by the Inhabitants of *Canada*, who many of them endeavour'd by all means to traverſe this our Diſcovery; they contented themſelves to build a Houſe at the Mouth of the River to the Eaſtward, where the place was Naturally Fortifi'd. On one ſide of this Houſe there is a very good Haven, where Ships may ſafely ride; nay, by the help of a Capſtone, they may eaſily be hall'd upon Land. Beſides, at this Place they take an infinite quantity of Whitings, Sturgeons, and all other ſorts of Fiſhes, which are incomparably good and ſweet; inſomuch that in the proper Seaſon of Fiſhing, they might furniſh the greateſt City in *Europe* with plenty of Fiſh.

CHAP. VIII.

A Deſcription of the Lake Erie.

THE *Iroqueſe* give to this Lake the Name of *Erie Tejocharontiong* which extends it ſelf from Eaſt to Weſt perhaps a hundred and forty Leagues in Length.

Length. But no *European* has ever ſurvey'd it all; only I and thoſe who accompany'd me in this Diſcovery, have view'd the greater Part of it with a Veſſel of Sixty Tun burden, which we caus'd to be made on purpoſe, about two Leagues above the foremention'd Fall of *Niagara*, as I ſhall have occaſion to obſerve more largely hereafter.

This Lake *Erie Tejocharontiong*, encloſes on its Southern Bank a Tract of Land as large as the Kingdom of *France*. It divides it ſelf at a certain place into two Channels, becauſe of a great Iſland enclos'd betwixt them: Thus continuing its courſe for fourteen Leagues, it falls into the Lake *Ontario*, or *Frontenac*; and this is that which they call the River *Niagara*.

Betwixt the Lake *Erie* and *Huron*, there is almoſt ſuch another Streight thirty Leagues long, which is of an equal breadth almoſt all over, except in the middle, that it enlarges it ſelf by help of another Lake, far leſs than any of the reſt, which is of a circular Form about Six Leagues over, according to the Obſervation of our Pilot. We gave it the Name of Lake *St. Claire*, though the *Iroqueſe*, who paſs over it frequently, when they are upon Warlike Expeditions, call it *Otſi Keta*. The Country which borders upon this moſt agreeable and charming Streight, is a pleaſant Champagne Country, as I ſhall relate afterwards. All theſe different Rivers, which are diſtinguiſh'd by ſo many different Names, are nothing elſe but the continuation of the great River *St. Laurence*; and this Lake *St. Claire* is form'd by the ſame.

CHAP. IX.

A Deſcription of the Lake Huron.

THE Lake *Huron* was ſo call'd by the People of *Canada*, becauſe the Savage *Hurons*, who inhabited the adjacent Country, us'd to have their Hair

ſo

ſo burned, that their Head reſembled the Head of a Wild-Boar. The Savages themſelves call it the Lake *Karegnondy*. Heretofore the *Hurons* lived near this Lake but they have been in a great meaſure deſtroy'd by the *Iroqueſe*.

The Circumference of this Lake may be reckon'd to be about Seven Hundred Leagues, and its Length Two hundred; but the Breadth is very unequal. To the Weſt of it near its Mouth, it contains ſeveral great Iſlands, and is navigable all over. Betwixt this great Lake and that of the *Illinois*, we meet with another Streight, which diſcharges it ſelf into this Lake, being about Three Leagues long, and One broad, its Courſe running Weſt-North-Weſt.

There is yet another Streight or narrow Canal towards the Upper Lake (that runs into this of *Huron*) about Five Leagues broad, and Fifteen Leagues long, which is interrupted by ſeveral Iſlands, and becomes narrower by degrees, till it comes at the fall of *St. Mary*. This fall is a Precipice full of Rocks, over which the Water of the upper Lake, which flows thither in great abundance, caſts it ſelf with a moſt violent Impetuoſity: Notwithſtanding which, a Canou may go up it on one ſide, provided the People in it row vigorouſly. But the ſafer way is to carry the Canou over-land for ſo little a ſpace, together with the Commodities that thoſe of *Canada* carry thither to exchange with the Savages that live to the Northward of the upper Lake. This Fall is called the fall of St. *Mary Miſſilimakinak*. It lies at the Mouth of the upper Lake, and diſcharges it ſelf partly into the Mouth of the Lake *Illinois* towards the great Bay of *Puans*; all which ſhall afterwards be more fully diſcours'd of, when I come to relate our Return from *Iſſati*.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

A Deſcription of the Lake call'd by the Savages Illinouack, *and by the* French, Illinois.

THE Lake *Illinois*, in the Natives Language, ſignifies, *The Lake of Men*; for the word *Illinois* ſignifies *a Man of full Age in the vigour of his Years.* It lies on the Weſt of the Lake *Huron* ſtanding North and South, and is about a Hundred and twenty, or a Hundred and Thirty Leagues in length, and Forty in breadth, being in Circuit about Four hundred Leagues. It is call'd by the *Miami's*, *Miſchigonong*, that is, *The Great Lake.* It extends it ſelf from North to South, and falls into the Southern-ſide of the Lake *Huron*; and is diſtant from the Upper Lake about Fifteen or Sixteen Leagues, its Source lies near a River which the *Iroqueſe* call *Hohio*, where the River *Miamis* diſcharges it ſelf into the ſame Lake.

It is navigable all over, and has to the Weſtward a great Bay call'd the Bay of *Puans*, by reaſon that the Savages who now inhabit the Land ſurrounding this Bay, had deſerted their former Habitation, becauſe of ſome ſtinking (in *French Puans*) Waters towards the Sea that annoy'd them.

CHAP. XI.

A ſhort Deſcription of the Upper Lake.

THis Upper Lake runs from Eaſt to Weſt, and may have more than a Hundred and Fifty Leagues in length Sixty in breadth, and Five hundred in circuit. We never went quite over it, as we did over all the others I've hitherto mention'd; but we ſounded ſome of its greateſt Depths, and it reſembles the Ocean, having neither Bottom nor Banks.

I ſhall not here ſtay to mention the infinite numbers of Rivers that diſcharge themſelves into this prodigious Lake, which together with that of *Illinois* and the Rivers that are ſwallow'd in them, make up the ſource of that Great River *St. Laurence*, which runs into the Ocean at the Iſland of *Aſſumption* towards *New-found-land*. We ſail'd upon this River about Six hundred Leagues from its Mouth to its Source.

I've already obſerv'd, That all theſe Lakes may well be call'd Freſh-water Seas. They abound extreamly in Whitings, that are larger than Carps, and which are extraordinary good; nay, at Twenty or Thirty Fathom Water, there are Salmon-Trouts taken of Fifty or Sixty pound weight. It were eaſie to build on the ſides of theſe great Lakes, an infinite Number of conſiderable Towns which might have Communication one with another by Navigation for Five hundred Leagues together, and by an inconceivable Commerce which would eſtabliſh it ſelf among 'em. And to be ſure the Soil, if cultivated by *Europeans* would prove very fertile. Thoſe that can conceive the Largneſs and Beauty of theſe Lakes, may eaſily underſtand, by the help of our Map, what courſe we ſteer'd in making the great Diſcovery hereafter mention'd.

CHAP. XII.

What is the Predominant Genius *of the Inhabitants of* Canada.

THE *Spaniards* were the firſt who diſcover'd *Canada*; but at their firſt arrival, having found nothing conſiderable in it, they abandon'd the Country, and call'd it *Il Capo di Nada*; that is, *A Cape of Nothing*; hence by corruption ſprung the Word *Canada*, which we uſe in all our Maps.

Since

Since I left that Country, I underſtand that all things continue very near in the ſame State as they were whilſt I reſided there. Thoſe who have the Government of *Canada* committed to their Care, are moved with ſuch a malignant Spirit, as obliges all who do not approve their Deſign, to moan ſecretly before God. Men of Probity that are Zealous for Religion, find nothing there of what they expected; but, on the Contrary, ſuch Repulſes and ill Uſage, that no body could have foreſeen. Several reſort thither, with a deſign to Sacrifice their Repoſe and Life, to the Temporal and Spiritual Succour of an Infant-Church: but the loſs of Reputation and Honour, are the Sacrifices they'r after all forced to make. Others go thither in the hopes of ſpending their Lives in Peace and perfect Concord; whereas they meet with nothing but Jars, Diviſions, and a Sea of Troubles. In lieu of their fair Hopes, they reap nothing but Croſſes and Perſecution; and all for not pleaſing the Humours of Two or Three Men, who are the over-ruling Wits of that Coutry. What a vaſt diſparity or diſtance there is betwixt the Humour of theſe Men, and our *Flemiſh* Sincerity! I mean that Candour and Evenneſs of Mind which make up the true Character of a Chriſtian, and is obſerv'd every where elſe.

But without entring farther into any particulars, I leave the Judgment of all unto God; and ſhall only ſay, that we who are *Flemings* by Birth, went to *Canada* without any other private Deſign, having renounc'd our Native Country, meerly for the Service of our Religion, after having quitted all other Enjoyments for embracing a Religious Profeſſion. And therefore it was not a ſmall Surprize to us, upon our arrival in that Country, to ſee our Sincerity and Uprightneſs of Heart ſo ſorrily entertain'd. There is a certain ſort of People, who are jealous of every thing, and whom it is impoſſible to retrieve from under the firſt impreſſions they've receiv'd. Though

a Man were never ſo complaiſant, yet if he be not altogether of their Stamp, or if he endeavours to repreſent Things fairly and rationally unto them, tho' with wiſe and ſoft Remonſtrances: yet ſhall he paſs among 'em for a Fellow of a Turbulent Spirit. Such Conduct as this, does not ſavour of Chriſtianity, neither doth it beſpeak any other proſpect than that of temporal Intereſt. This Conſideration mov'd me oft-times to ſay to the Three *Flemiſh* Monks I had brought to *Canada* with me, that it had been much better for us who had quitted all our Enjoyments, and exchang'd them for the Poverty of a Monaſtick Life, to have gone in Miſſion among Strangers, to preach Repentance unto Infidels, and propagate the Kingdom of our Saviour among barbarous Nations.

And indeed kind Providence ſeconded my good Intentions; for the Reverend Father *German Allart* Recollet, late Biſhop of *Vence* in *Provence*, ſent me Orders to undertake the Diſcovery which I am about to relate.

CHAP. XIII.

A Deſcription of my firſt Imbarkment in a Canou at Quebec, *the Capital City of* Canada, *being bound for the South-Weſt of* New-France, *or* Canada.

I Remained Two Years and a half at Fort *Frontenac*, till I ſaw the Houſe of *Miſſion* finiſh'd, that Father *Luke Buiſſet* and I had caus'd to be built there. This engaged us in Travails, which inſeparably attend New Eſtabliſhments. Accordingly we went in a Canou down the River St. *Laurence*; and after a Hundred and twenty Leagues ſailing, arriv'd at *Quebec*, where I retir'd into the *Recollets* Convent of St. *Mary*, in order to prepare and ſanctifie my ſelf for commencing our Diſcovery.

And

And indeed I muſt frankly own, that when at the foot of the Croſs, I penſively conſider'd this important Miſſion, weighing it in the Scales of Humane Reaſon, and meaſuring the weight of its Difficulties by Humane Force, it ſeem'd altogether a a terrible, as well as a raſh and inconſiderate Attempt. But when I look'd up to GOD, and view'd it as an effect of his Goodneſs, in chuſing me for ſo great a Work, and as his Commandment directed to me by the Mouth of my Superiours, who are the Inſtruments and Interpreters of his Will unto me: Theſe thoughts, I ſay, preſently inſpired me with Courage and Reſolution, to undertake this Diſcovery, with all the Fidelity and Conſtancy imaginable.

I perſuaded my ſelf, that ſince it was the peculiar Work of God, to open the hard Hearts of that barbarous People, to whom I was ſent to publiſh the glad Tidings of his Goſpel, it were as eaſie for him to compaſs it by a feeble Inſtrument, ſuch as I was, as by the moſt worthy Perſon in the World.

Having thus prepar'd my ſelf to enter upon the diſcharge of my *Miſſion*, and ſeeing that thoſe who were expected from *Europe*, to bear part in this Diſcovery, were now arriv'd; that the Pilot, Seamen, and Ship-Carpenters were in readineſs, and that the Arms, Goods, and Rigging for the Ships were all at hand; I took with me from our Convent a portable Chapel all compleat for my ſelf, and afterwards went and received the Benediction of the Biſhop of *Quebec*, together with his Approbation in Writing; which I likewiſe receiv'd of Count *Frontenac*, who was a Man that teſtify'd a great deal of Affection for our *Flemiſh* Recollects, becauſe of our Candour and Ingenuity; and who was pleas'd to give a publick Teſtimony to the Generoſity of my Undertaking, while we were ſet at Table.

In ſhort, I embark'd in a little Canou made of the Barks of Birch-Trees, carrying nothing along

with me ſave my portable Chapel, one Blanket, and a Matt of Ruſhes, which was to ſerve me for Bed and Quilt; and this was the whole of my Equipage. It was concerted ſo, that I ſhould go off firſt, that my Departure might oblige the reſt to expedite their Affairs with ſpeed. The Inhabitants of *Canada*, upon both ſides the River of St. *Laurence*, betwixt *Quebec* and *Monreal*, entreated me to officiate among them, and adminiſter the Sacraments: For they could not aſſiſt at Divine Service oftner than five or ſix times a Year, becauſe there were only Four *Miſſionaries* in that Country for the extent of 50. Leagues.

I baptiz'd a Child at a certain Place call'd *St. Hour*, and acquainted the abſent Miſſionary of the Place with the ſame; which done, I continu'd my Voyage; and as I paſs'd by *Harpentinie*, the Lord of the Place of one of the ancienteſt Families in *Canada*, would have ſent one of his Sons along with me; but the Canou was too narrow for Four Perſons. At length I arriv'd at *Trois Rivieres*, which is a Town only ſurrounded with Palliſado's, lying about Thirty Leagues higher than *Quebec*. Not meeting there Father *Sixte*, a Recollet-Miſſionary, who was gone from thence in Miſſion, the Inhabitants beſeech'd me to preach and perform Divine Service on the Firſt of *October*. The next day, the Sieur *Bonnivet*, Lieutenant-General Juſticiary of that Place, convey'd me a League up the River St *Laurence*.

The moſt laudable Enterprizes are oft-times retarded by ſurprizing and unexpected Obſtacles; for when I arriv'd at *Monreal*, they debauch'd and entic'd away my Two Boat-Men; ſo that I was forc'd to take advantage of an offer which two other Men made to conduct me along in their little ſhatter'd Boat. Thus was it that thoſe who envy'd the Succeſs of my Undertaking, began to ſet themſelves in oppoſition to it, and endeavour'd to hinder the moſt conſiderable and famous Diſcovery that has beeen made in that New World in this Age.

In

In going up the River, as I paſs'd the Lake of *St. Louis*, a little above the Iſle of *Monreal*, which is about Twenty five Leagues in circumference, I obſerv'd that this River St. *Laurence* divides it ſelf into Two Branches; of which one Leads to the ancient Country of the *Hurons*, the *Outaouacts*, and ſeveral other Nations ſituate to the Northward; and the other to the Country of the *Iroqueſe*. We went up this laſt for about Sixty Leagues, in moſt rapid and horrible Currents, full of great Rocks, where the Water roars Night and Day like Thunder, for Three or Four Leagues together. All which does not hinder the Boat-Men and their Canou's to deſcend down among theſe huge Rocks with ſo much ſwiftneſs, that thoſe who are in the Canou are for the time quite blinded. They generally carry Elks-Claws and Shins with them, which they Exchange for other Goods, with the Savages of that Country.

I ſhall not offer to give any circumſtantial Account of the Accidents that befel me, which are inſeparable Companions of all great Voyages: What is needful to be ſaid is, That I arriv'd at Fort *Cataroköuy*, or *Frontenac*, about Eleven a Clock at Night, the next Day after *All-Saints*; where our Recollet-Fathers, *Gabriel de la Ribourde*, and *Luke Biſſet*, Miſſionaries, receiv'd me with all Expreſſions of Joy into our Houſe of Miſſion, which we had caus'd to be built the Year before, upon the brink of the Lake *Ontario*, near to Fort *Frontenac*, This Fort lies about forty four Degrees and ſome Minutes of Northern Latitude.

I had forgot to acquaint you, that this Lake *Ontario* is form'd by the River St. *Laurence*, and that it is deep enough for large Veſſels; for at ſeventy Fathom we could diſcern no Ground. The Waves there are toſs'd by mighty Winds which are very frequent; and their Surges are full as high as thoſe of the Sea, but much more dangerous; for they

are ſhorter and ſteeper; ſo that a Veſſel riding along cannot yield and keep touch with 'em. There are likewiſe ſome very plain appearances of a Flux and Reflux; for they obſerve the Water to flow and ebb by little Tides, and that it flows oft-times againſt the Wind when very high.

The Fiſhing of this Lake, as of all the other Lakes before-mention'd, is very conſiderable for all manner of excellent Fiſhes, eſpecially for Salmon-Trouts, which are much bigger than our biggeſt Salmons. The adjacent Country is very fertile, as is confirm'd by the Experience of thoſe who cultivated it in ſeveral places. There is excellent Game there for all ſorts of Wild Beaſts and Wild Fowl: Their Foreſts are repleniſh'd with the prettieſt Trees in the World, Pines, Cedars, and *Epinetes*, (a ſort of Fir-tree very common in that Country.) They have likewiſe very good Iron-Mines; and no doubt but other Metals might be found if ſought after.

While I abode at *Catarokouy*, waiting the coming up of the reſt of our Company, I had time to confer with the Reverend Fathers of our Order concerning what Meaſures we were to take for converting unto Chriſt Jeſus, ſuch a numerous Train of Nations that had never heard of the Goſpel; for it is certain, that ſuch poor helpleſs Prieſts as we of the *Franciſcan* Order, deſtitute of all temporal Enjoyments, and cut off from all Humane Means and Aſſiſtance, cannot be too cautious in managing the Concerns of ſo important a Miſſion, becauſe of the infinite variety of the Tempers of thoſe that were to accompany us in this Voyage; for we had in company ſome *Flemings*, ſome *Italians*, and ſome *Normans*, who were all of different Intereſts; and it was a very difficult Task for us to comply with, and pleaſe ſo many different Humours; eſpecially when engag'd in ſuch a Voyage as this, in which Laws could not be obſerv'd with the ſame Exactneſs, or retain the ſame Rigour as in *Europe*, where Men may

may be entic'd to Good, and ſcar'd from Evil, by the Love of Rewards or the fear of Puniſhment. But I reſign'd my ſelf wholly to the Exerciſe of my Duty, leaving the Conduct of all unto God's Providence, and being ready to encounter whatever Accidents might fall in my way.

The *Iroqueſe* whom we had brought to ſettle near this Fort (as was above related) came oft-times to viſit us, and made us Preſents of the Fleſh of Elks, and Roe-bucks; in lieu of which we gave 'em little Knives and ſome Tobacco, which we had for that purpoſe. Theſe Savages, when they reflected upon our deſigned Voyage, us'd to clap their Four Fingers on their Mouths (as they generally do when touch'd with the Admiration of any thing they cannot comprehend) and cry'd aloud, *Otchitagon, Gannoron!* that is, *Bare-Feet, what ye are about to undertake, is of great Importance:* And added, that their moſt valiant Adventurers had much ado to extricate themſelves out of the hands of thoſe barbarous Nations we were going to viſit. It is certain, that the *Iroqueſe* had a moſt tender Reſpect for the *Franciſcan* Monks, having obſerv'd them to live all in common, without reſerving any particular Poſſeſſions.

The Food of the *Iroqueſe* is in common among 'em. The ancienteſt Women in the Houſe diſtribute about to the other Perſons in the Family according to their Seniority. When they ſit at their Meals, they give freely to eat unto all that come into their Houſes, for they would rather chuſe to faſt for a whole Day, than ſuffer any one to go from their Houſes, without offering them a ſhare of whatever they had.

The Sieur *de la Salle* arriv'd at the Fort ſome time after me: God preſerv'd him (as he did me) from the Infinite Dangers he was expos'd to in this great Voyage betwixt *Quebec* and the Fort, having paſs'd the great fall of Water mention'd laſt, and ſeveral other moſt rapid Currents in his way thither. The

ſame

ſame Year he ſent off Fifteen of our Boat-men, who were to go before us. They made as if they had been going in their Canou towards the *Illinois*, and the other Neighbouring Nations that border upon the River, call'd by the *Illinois*, *Meſchaſipi*; that is, *a great River*; which Name it has in the Map. All this was only to ſecure to us a good Correſpondence with the Savages, and to prepare for us in that Country ſome Proviſions, and other Neceſſaries, to further this Diſcovery. But there being among them ſome Villanous Fellows, they ſtopp'd in the upper Lake at *Miſſilimakinak*, and diverted themſelves with the Savages that live to the Northward of that Lake, laviſhing and ſquandering away the beſt of the Commodities they had taken with them inſtead of providing ſuch Things as were needful for building a Ship, which we greatly wanted in order to paſs from Lake to Lake to the River *Meſchaſipi*.

CHAP. XIV.

A Deſcription of my ſecond Imbarkment at Fort Frontenac, *in a Brigantine upon the Lake* Ontario or Frontenac.

THat very ſame Year, on the Eighteenth of *November*, I took leave of our Monks at Fort *Frontenac*, aud after mutual Embraces and Expreſſions of Brotherly and Chriſtian Charity, I embark'd in a Brigantine of about ten Tuns. The Winds and the Cold of the Autumn were then very violent, inſomuch that our Crew was afraid to go into ſo little a Veſſel. This oblig'd us and the Sieur *de la Motte* our Commander, to keep our courſe on the North-ſide of the Lake, to ſhelter our ſelves under the Coaſt, againſt the North-weſt Wind, which otherwiſe would have forced us upon the Southern Coaſt of the Lake. This Voyage prov'd very difficult

cult and dangerous, becauſe of the unſeaſonable time of the Year, Winter being near at hand.

On the 26*th*, we were in great danger about Two large Leagues off the Land, where we were oblig'd to lie at an Anchor all that Night at ſixty Fathom Water and above; but at length the Wind coming to the North-Eaſt, we ſail'd on, and arriv'd ſafely at the further end of the Lake *Ontario*, call'd by the *Iroqueſe*, *Skannadario*. We came pretty near to one of their Villages call'd *Tajajagon*, lying about Seventy Leagues from Fort *Frontenac*, or *Catarokouy*.

We barter'd ſome *Indian* Corn with the *Iroqueſe*, who could not ſufficiently admire us, and came frequently to ſee us on board our Brigantine, which for our greater ſecurity, we had brought to an Anchor into a River, though before we could get in, we run a ground three times, which oblig'd us to put Fourteen Men into Canou's, and caſt the Baläſt of our Ship over-board to get her off again. That River falls into the Lake; but for fear of being frozen up therein, we were forced to cut the Ice with Axes and other Inſtruments.

The Wind turning then contrary, we were oblig'd to tarry there till the 15*th* of *December*, 1678. when we ſailed from the Northen Coaſt to the Southern, where the River *Niagara* runs into the Lake; but could not reach it that Day, though it is but Fifteen or Sixteen Leagues diſtant, and therefore caſt Anchor within Five Leagues of the Shore, where we had very bad Weather all the Night long.

On the 6th. being St. *Nicholas*'s Day, we got into the fine River *Niagara*, into which never any ſuch Ship as ours entred before. We ſung there *Te Deum*, and other Prayers, to return our Thanks to God Almighty for our proſperous Voyage. The *Iroqueſe Tſonnontouans* inhabiting the little Village, ſituated at the Mouth of the River, took above Three Hundred Whitings, which are bigger than Carps, and the beſt reliſh'd, as well as the wholſomeſt Fiſh in the World;

World; which they preſented all to us, imputing their good luck to our Arrival. They were much ſurprized at our Ship, which they call'd the *Great Woodden Canou.*

On the *7th*, we went in a Canou two Leagues up the River to look for a convenient Place for Building; but not being able to get the Canou farther up, becauſe the Current was too rapid for us to maſter, we went over land about three Leagues higher, though we found no Land fit for culture. We lay that Night near a River, which runs from the Weſtward, within a League above the great Fall of *Niagara*, which, as we have already ſaid, is the greateſt in the World. The Snow was then a Foot deep, and we were oblig'd to dig it up to make room for our Fire.

The next day we return'd the ſame way we went, and ſaw great Numbers of Wild Goats, and Wild Turkey-Cocks, and on the *11th* we ſaid the firſt Maſs that ever was ſaid in that Country. The Carpenters and the reſt of the Crew were ſet to work; but Monſieur *de la Motte*, who had the Direction of them, being not able to endure the Fatigues of ſo laborious a Life, gave over his Deſign, and return'd to *Canada*, having about two hundred Leagues to Travel.

The *12th*, *13th*, and *14th*, the Wind was not favourable enough to ſail up the River as far as the rapid Current above mention'd, where we had reſolved to build ſome Houſes.

Whoſoever conſiders our Map, will eaſily ſee, that this New Enterprize of building a Fort and ſome Houſes on the River *Niagara*, beſides the Fort of *Frontenac*, was like to give Jealouſie to the *Iroqueſe*, and even to the *Engliſh*, who live in this Neighbourhood, and have a great Commerce with them. Therefore to prevent the ill Conſequences of it, it was thought fit to ſend an Embaſſie to the *Iroqueſe*, as it will be mention'd in the next Chapter.

The

The 15*th* I was deſired to ſit at the Helm of our Brigantine, while three of our Men hall'd the ſame from the Shore with a Rope; and at laſt we brought her up, and moor'd her to the Shore with a Halſer, near a Rock of a prodigious heighth, lying upon the rapid Currents we have already mention'd. The 17th, 18th, and 19th, we were buſie in making a Cabin with Palliſado's, to ſerve for a Magazine; but the Ground was ſo frozen, that we were forc'd to throw ſeveral times boiling Water upon it to facilitate the beating in and driving down the Stakes. The 20th, 21ſt, 22d, and 23d, our Ship was in great danger to be daſh'd in pieces, by the vaſt pieces of Ice that were hurl'd down the River; to prevent which, our Carpenters made a Capſtone to hall her aſhore; but our great Cable broke in three pieces; whereupon one of our Carpenters ſurrounded the Veſſel with a Cable, and ty'd it to ſeveral Ropes, whereby we got her aſhore, tho' with much difficulty, and ſav'd her from the danger of being broke to pieces, or carryed away by the Ice, which came down with an extream violence from the great Fall of *Niagara*.

CHAP. XV.

An Account of the Embaſſie to the Iroqueſe Tſonnontouans.

THeſe Savages being the moſt numerous Nation of that Country, it was requiſite to avoid giving them any manner of ſuſpicion; and in order thereto, we thought fit to prepoſſeſs thoſe of the little Village of *Niagara* with a favourable opinion of our Deſign: We told them, that we did not intend to build a Fort on the Bank of their River *Niagara*, but only a great *Hanger* or Store-houſe, to keep the Commodities we had brought to ſupply their Occaſions. We accompany'd our Diſcourſe with ſome ſmall

ſmall Preſents, and told them that we ſhould remain with them, while Six or Seven of our Company went to the great Village of the *Tſonnontouans*, to treat with their Chief Captains. And truly it it was abſolutely neceſſary to go thither to remove the Suſpicion the Enemies of our Diſcovery had ſuggeſted to that People concerning our Deſigns.

As I was building a little Cabin of Bark, to perform Divine Service therein, M. *de la Motte*, who was ſtill with us, deſired me to accompany him in his Embaſſie, which I was very unwilling to comply with; and therefore intreated him to ſuffer me to ſtay there with the greater number of our Men. But notwithſtanding the Arguments I us'd, he told me that he was reſolv'd to take along with him 7 Men out of 16. that we were in all; that I underſtood in a manner the Language of their Nation, having been often in Conference with them at the Fort of *Frontenac*; that the Glory of God was concern'd in this Undertaking; that he would not truſt thoſe that were to accompany him; in ſhort, that if our Enterprize ſhould miſcarry upon that Account, the Blame would lie at my door. Theſe with ſome other ſecret Reaſons, oblig'd me to comply with his his Deſire and to follow him.

We travelled with Shoes made after the *Indian* way, of a ſingle Skin, but without Soles, becauſe the Earth was ſtill cover'd with Snow, and paſt through Foreſts for thirty two Leagues together, carrying upon our Backs our Coverings and other Baggage, lying often in open Field, and having with us no other Food but ſome roaſted *Indian* Corn: 'Tis true, we met upon our Road ſome *Iroqueſe* a hunting, who gave us ſome wild Goats, and Fifteen or Sixteen black Squirrels, which are excellent Meat. However, after five Days Journey, we came to *Tagarondies*, a great Village of the *Iroqueſe Tſonnontouans*, and were immediately carry'd to the Cabin of their Principal Chief, where Women

and

and Children flock'd to ſee us, our Men being very well dreſt and arm'd. An old Man having according to Cuſtom made publick Cries, to give Notice of our arrival to their Village; the younger Savages waſh'd our Feet, which afterwards they rubb'd over with the Greaſe of Deers, wild Goats, and other Beaſts, and the Oil of Bears.

The next Day, which was the Firſt of the Year 1679. After the ordinary Service I preach'd in a little Chapel made of Barks of Trees, in preſence of two Jeſuites, *viz.* Father *Garnier* and *Rafeix*; and afterwards we had a Conference with 42 old Men, who make up their Council. Theſe Savages are for the moſt part tall, and very well ſhap'd, cover'd with a ſort of Robe made of Beavers and Wolves-Skins, or of black Squirrels, holding a Pipe or *Calumet* in their Hands. The Senators of *Venice* do not appear with a graver Countenance, and perhaps don't ſpeak with more Majeſty and Solidity, than thoſe Ancient *Iroqueſe*.

This Nation is the moſt cruel and barbarous of all *America*, eſpecially to their Slaves, whom they take above two or three hundred Leagues from their Country, as I ſhall ſhew in my ſecond Volume; however, I muſt do them the Juſtice to obſerve, that they have many good Qualities; and that they love the *Europeans*, to whom they ſell their Commodities at very reaſonable Rates. They have a mortal-Hatred for thoſe, who being too ſelf-intereſted and covetous, are always endeavouring to enrich themſelves to the Prejudice of others. Their chief Commodities are Beavers-Skins, which they bring from above a hundred and fifty Leagues off their Habitations, to exchange them with the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, whom they affect more than the Inhabitants of *Canada*, becauſe they are more affable, and ſell them their Commodities cheaper.

One of our own Men nam'd *Anthony Broſſard*, who underſtood very well the Language of the *Iroqueſe*,

queſe, and therefore was Interpreter to M. *de la Motte*, told their Aſſmebly,

Firſt, That we were come to pay them a Viſit, and ſmoak with them in their Pipes, a Ceremony which I ſhall deſcribe anon: And then we deliver'd our Preſents, conſiſting of Axes, Knives, a great Collar of white and blue Procelain, with ſome Gowns. We made Preſents upon every Point we propos'd to them, of the ſame nature as the former.

Secondly, We deſir'd them, in the next place to give notice to the five Cantons of their Nation, that we were about to build a Ship, or great woodden Canou above the great Fall of the River *Niagara*, to go and fetch *European* Commodities by a more convenient paſſage than the ordinary one, by the *River* St. *Laurence*, whoſe rapid Currents make it dangerous and long; and that by theſe means we ſhould afford them our Commodities cheaper than the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* of *Boſton* and *New-York*. This Pretence was ſpecious enough, and very well contriv'd to engage the barbarous Nation to extirpate the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* out of *America*: For they ſuffer the *Europeans* among them only for the Fear they have of them, or elſe for the Profit they make in Bartering their Commodities with them.

Thirdly, We told them farther, that we ſhould provide them at the River *Niagara* with a Black-ſmith and a Gun-ſmith, to mend their Guns, Axes, *&c.* having no body among them that underſtood that Trade, and that for the conveniency of their whole Nation, we would ſettle thoſe Workmen on the Lake of *Ontario*, at the Mouth of the River *Niagara*. We threw again among them ſeven or eight Gowns, and ſome Pieces of fine Cloth, which they cover themſelves with from the Waſt to the Knees. This was in order to engage them on our ſide, and prevent their giving ear to any who might ſuggeſt ill things of us, entreating them firſt to acquaint us with

with the Reports that ſhould be made unto them to our Prejudice, before they yeilded their Belief to the ſame.

We added many other Reaſons which we thought proper to perſuade them to favour our Deſign. The Preſents we made unto them, either in Cloth or Iron, were worth above 400 Livres, beſides ſome other *European* Commodities, very ſcarce in that Country: For the beſt Reaſons in the World are not liſtned to among them, unleſs they are enforc'd with Preſents.

I forgot to obſerve, that before our Interpreter began to talk of theſe matters with the Council, M. *de la Motte* order'd him to tell the *Iroqueſe*, That he would enter into no Particulars in preſence of Father *Garnier* a Jeſuite, whom he much ſuſpected: Whereupon the old Senators order'd the ſaid Father to withdraw. As I had a great Reſpect for him, I went out likewiſe to bear part of the Affront put upon him, and to let M. *la Motte* ſee that he had no reaſon to deſire me to go to the Council with him, ſince he had reſolv'd to affront in my preſence a Jeſuite-Miſſionary, who was amongſt that barbarous Nation, without any other Deſign but to inſtruct them in the Truth of the Goſpel. This was the reaſon why I was not preſent in the Council, the firſt Day that we acquainted the *Iroqueſe*, with the ſubject of our Embaſſie. I eaſily obſerv'd, that M. *la Motte* had been bred up amongſt People, profeſs'd Enemies of all Monks and Prieſts; from whence I concluded, that he would lay upon me all the Overſights he might commit in his Negotiation: But I thought it was better he ſhould be deceiv'd by thoſe he employ'd, than to be ſo my ſelf; and therefore would never meddle with any Temporal Concerns, though earneſtly deſir'd by him and others. The *Iroqueſe*, and other wild Nations, had a great Love for me upon that Account: They have ſupply'd me with Food for my ſubſiſtance, and reliev'd me

upon other occaſions, only becauſe they obſerv'd I was not guided by a private ſelf-intereſt; and truly whenever they made me any Preſents, in return of thoſe which I made unto them; I immediately gave them to their Children.

The next Day the *Iroqueſe* anſwered our Diſcourſe and Preſents Article by Article, having laid upon the Ground ſeveral little pieces of Wood, to put them in mind of what had been ſaid the Day before in the Council; their Speaker, or Preſident held in his Hand one of theſe Pieces of Wood, and when he had anſwer'd one Article of our Propoſal, he laid it down, with ſome Preſents of black and white Porcelain, which they uſe to ſtring upon the ſmalleſt Sinews of Beaſts; and then took up another Piece of Wood; and ſo of all the reſt, till he had fully anſwer'd our Speech, of which thoſe Pieces of Wood, and our Preſents put them in mind. When his Diſcourſe was ended, the oldeſt Man of their Aſſembly cry'd aloud three times, *Niaoua*; that is to ſay, *It is well, I thank thee*, which was repeated with a full Voice; and in a tuneful manner by all the other Senators.

'Tis to be obſerv'd here, that the Savages, though ſome are more cunning than others, are generally all addicted to their own Intereſts; and therefore tho' the *Iroqueſe* ſeem'd to be pleas'd with our Propoſals, they were not really ſo; for the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* affording them the *European* Commodities at cheaper Rates than the *French* of *Canada*, they had a greater Inclination for them than for us. That People, tho' ſo barbarous and rude in their Manners, have however a Piece of Civility peculiar to themſelves; for a Man would be counted very impertinent if he contradicted any thing that is ſaid in their Council, and if he does not approve even the greateſt Abſurdities therein propos'd; and therefore they always anſwer *Niaoua*; that is to ſay *Thou art in the right Brother*; *that is well.*

Not-

Notwithſtanding that ſeeming Approbation, they believe what they pleaſe and no more; and therefore 'tis impoſſible to know when they are really perſuaded of thoſe things you have mention'd unto them, which I take to be one of the greateſt Obſtructions to their Converſion: For their Civility hindring them from making any Objection, or contradicting what is ſaid unto them, they ſeem to approve of it, though perhaps they laugh at it in private, or elſe never beſtow a moment to reflect upon it, ſuch being their indifference for a future Life. From theſe Obſervations, I conclude that the Converſion of theſe People is to be deſpair'd of, 'till they are ſubdu'd by the *Europeans*, and that their Children have another ſort of Education, unleſs God be pleas'd to work a Miracle in their Favour.

While we were ſtill with the *Iroqueſe*, their Parties made an Excurſion towards *Virginia*, and brought two Priſoners with them, one whereof was *Houtouagaha*, which in the Language of the *Iroqueſe*, ſignifies a talkative or babling Fellow, and the other of the Nation of *Gannieſſinga*, whither ſome *Engliſh Franciſcans* were ſent Miſſionaries. The *Iroqueſe* ſpar'd the Life of this laſt, but put to Death the former, with ſuch exquiſite Torments, that *Nero*, *Domitian*, and *Maximilian*, never invented the like, to exerciſe the Patience of the Martyrs of the Primitive Church withall.

They uſe commonly that Inhumanity towards all the Priſoners they take in their Warlike Expeditions; but the worſt of it is, that their Torments laſt ſometimes a Month. When they have brought them into their *Canton*, they lay them upon ſome pieces of Wood, made like a St. *Andrew*'s Croſs, to which they tie the Legs and Arms of thoſe miſerable Wretches, and expoſe them to Gnats and other Flies, who ſting them to death. The Children of thoſe Barbarous Parents, cut pieces of Fleſh out of their Flanks, Thighs, or ſome other part of their Bodies; and when they have boyl'd it force thoſe

poor Wretches to eat thereof. *The Iroqueſe* eat ſome pieces of it themſelves, as well as their Children; and the better to inſpire thoſe little Canibals with Hatred for their Enemies, and the deſire to extirpate them, they give them their Blood to drink in ſome little Porringers made of Barks of Trees. Thus do theſe poor Creatures end their Life, after a long and unſpeakable Torment.

That horrid Cruelty oblig'd us to leave the Cabin, or Cottage of the Chief Captain of that barbarous People, to ſhew them the Horror we had of their Inhumanity, and never eat with them ſince, but return'd the ſame way we went through the Woods to the River *Niagara*. And this was all the ſucceſs of our Embaſſie.

CHAP. XVI.

A Deſcription of a Ship of Sixty Tuns, which we built near the Streights of the Lake Erie, *during the Winter and Spring of the Year* 1679.

ON the 14th of *January* we arrived at our Habitation of *Niagara*, very weary of the Fatigues of our Voyage. We had no other Food but *Indian* Corn; but by good luck for us, the Fiſhery of the Whitings, I have already ſpoken of, was then in ſeaſon, and made our *Indian* Corn more reliſhing. We made uſe of the Water, in which the Fiſh was boiled, inſtead of Broth of Meat; for when it grows cold in the Pot, it congeals it ſelf like ſome Veal-Broth.

On the 20th arrived M. *de la Salle* from Fort *Frontenac*, from whence he was ſent with a great Barque to ſupply us with Proviſions, Rigging, and Tackling for the Ship we deſign'd to build at the Mouth of the Lake *Erie*; but that Barque was unfortunately caſt away, on the Southern Coaſt of the Lake *Ontario*, by the

the fault of two Pilots, who could not agree about the Courſe they were to ſteer, tho' they were then only within two Leagues of *Niagara*. The Sea-men have call'd this place the *Mad Cape*. The Anchors and Cables were ſav'd, but ſeveral Canou's made of Barks of Trees, with Goods and Commodities were loſt. Theſe diſappointments were ſuch as would have diſſuaded from any farther Enterprize all other Perſons, but ſuch who had form'd the generous Deſign of making a New Diſcovery in the Country.

M. *de la Salle* told us, that before he loſt his Barque, he had been with the *Iroqueſe Tſonnontouans*, and had ſo dexterouſly gain'd their Affection, that they had talk'd to him of our Embaſſie with Applauſe; and had given him their Conſent for the Execution of our Undertaking. This good intelligence laſted but a little while; for certain Perſons, who made it their Buſineſs to Croſs our Deſign, inſpir'd the *Iroqueſe* with many ſuſpicions, about the Fort we were building at *Niagara*, which was in a great forwardneſs; and their Suſpicions grew ſo high, that we were oblig'd to give over our Building for ſome time, contenting our ſelves with an Habitation encompaſs'd with Palliſado's.

On the 22th of the ſaid Month, we went two Leagues above the great Fall of *Niagara*, where we made a Dock for Building the Ship we wanted for our Voyage. This was the moſt convenient place we could pitch upon, being upon a River which falls into the Streight, between the Lake *Erie*, and the great Fall of *Niagara*. The 26th, the Keel of the Ship and ſome other Pieces being ready, M. *de la Salle* ſent the Maſter-Carpenter, to deſire me to drive in the firſt Pin; but my Profeſſion obliging me to decline that Honour, he did it himſelf, and promis'd Ten *Louis d'Or's*, to encourage the Carpenter, and further the Work. The Winter being not half ſo hard in that Country as in *Canada*, we employ'd one of the two Savages of the Nation call'd the *Wolf*, whom we

kept for Hunting, in building ſome Cabins made of Rinds of Trees; and I had one made on purpoſe to perform Divine Service therein on *Sundays*, and other occaſions.

M. *de la Salle* having ſome urgent Buſineſs of his own, return'd to Fort *Frontenac*, leaving for our Commander one *Tonti*, an *Italian* by Birth, who had been forc'd to retire into *France* after the Revolution of *Naples*, in which his Father was concern'd. I conducted M. *de la Salle* as far as the Lake *Ontario*, at the Mouth of the River *Niagara*, where we order'd a Houſe to be built for the Smith he had promis'd to the *Iroqueſe*; but this was only to amuze them, and therefore I cannot but own that the Savages are not to be blam'd for having not believ'd every thing they were told by M. *la Motte* in his Embaſſie already related.

He undertook his Journey a-foot over the Snow, having no other Proviſions but a little Sack of *Indian* Corn roaſted, which fail'd him two Days before he came to the Fort, which is above fourſcore Leagues diſtant from the Place where he left us. However he got home ſafely with two Men, and a Dog, who dragg'd his Baggage over the Ice or frozen Snow.

When I return'd to our Dock, I underſtood that moſt of the *Iroqueſe* were gone to wage War with a Nation on the other ſide of the Lake *Erie*. In the mean time, our Men continu'd with great Application to build our Ship; for the *Iroqueſe* who were left behind, being but a ſmall number, were not ſo inſolent as before, though they come now and then to our Dock, and expreſs'd ſome Diſcontent at what we were doing. One of them in particular, feigning himſelf drunk, attempted to kill our Smith, but was vigorouſly repuls'd by him with a red-hot Iron-barr, which, together with the Reprimand he receiv'd from me, oblig'd him to be gone. Some few Days after, a Savage Woman gave us notice, that the *Tſonnontouans* had reſolv'd to burn our Ship in the Dock, and had

had certainly done it, had we not been always upon our Guard.

Theſe frequent Alarms from the Natives, together with the Fears we were in of wanting Proviſions, having loſt the great Barque from Fort *Frontenac*, which ſhould have reliev'd us, and the *Tſonnontouans* at the ſame time refuſing to give us of their Corn for Money, were a great Diſcouragement to our Carpenters, whom on the other hand, a Villain amongſt us endeavour'd to ſeduce: That pitiful Fellow had ſeveral times attempted to run away from us into *New-York*, and would have been likely to pervert our Carpenters, had I not confirm'd them in their good Reſolution, by the Exhortations I us'd to make every Holy-day after Divine Service; in which I repreſented to them, that the Glory of God was concern'd in our Undertaking, beſides the Good and Advantage of our Chriſtian Colonies; and therefore exhorted them to redouble their Diligence, in order to free our ſelves from all thoſe Inconveniences and Apprehenſions we then lay under.

The two Savages we had taken into our Service, went all this while a Hunting, and ſupply'd us with Wild-Goats, and other Beaſts for our Subſiſtence; which encourag'd our Workmen to go on with their Work more briskly than before, inſomuch that in a ſhort time our Ship was in a readineſs to be launch'd; which we did, after having bleſs'd the ſame according to the uſe of the *Romiſh* Church. We made all the haſte we could to get it afloat, though not altogether finiſh'd, to prevent the Deſigns of the Natives, who had reſolv'd to burn it.

The Ship was call'd the *Griffin*, alluding to the Arms of Count *Frontenac*, which have two *Griffins* for *Supporters*; and beſides, M. *la Salle* us'd to ſay of this Ship, while yet upon the Stocks, that he would make the *Griffin* fly above the *Ravens*. We fir'd three Guns, and ſung *Te Deum*, which was attended with loud Acclamations of Joy; of which thoſe of the

Iroqueſe, who were accidentally preſent at this Ceremony, were alſo Partakers; for we gave them ſome Brandy to drink, as well as to our Men, who immediately quitted their Cabins of Rinds of Trees, and hang'd their Hammocks under the Deck of the Ship, there to lie with more ſecurity than aſhore. We did the like, inſomuch that the very ſame Day we were all on Board, and thereby out of the reach of the Inſults of the Savages.

The *Iroqueſe* being returned from hunting Beavers, were mightily ſurprized to ſee our Ship a-float, and call'd us *Otkon*, which is in their Language, *Moſt penetrating Wits*: For they could not apprehend how in ſo ſhort a time we had been able to build ſo great a Ship, though it was but 60 Tuns. It might have been indeed call'd a moving Fortreſs; for all the Savages inhabiting the Banks of thoſe Lakes and Rivers I have mentioned, for five hundred Leagues together, were filled with Fear as well as Admiration when they ſaw it.

The beſt Deſigns are often croſs'd by ſome unexpected Accidents, which God permits to happen, to try Mens Conſtancy, as I experienced at that time. One of our Crew gave me notice, that the Sieur *de Tonti* our Commander, entertain'd ſome Jealouſie of me, becauſe I kept a Journal of all the conſiderable Things that were Tranſacted; and that he deſign'd to take the ſame from me. This Advice obliged me to ſtand upon my Guard, and take all other Precautions, to ſecure my Obſervations, and remove the Jealouſie that Gentleman had of me: For I had no other Deſign but to keep our Men to their Duty, and to Exerciſes of Piety and Devotion, for preventing Diſorders, and for the furtherance of our Common Undertaking.

In the mean time, our Enemies ſpread very diſadvantagious Reports of us in *Canada*, where we were repreſented as raſh and inconſiderate Perſons, for venturing upon ſo dangerous a Voyage, from which

which in their Opinion, none of us would ever return. This, together with the Difficulties we laboured under for tranſporting the Rigging of our Ship, and the other Inconveniencies neceſſarily attending a Voyage through an unknown Country, Lakes, and Rivers where no *European* had travelled before, and the Oppoſitions from the *Iroqueſe*, wrought in me an unparallel'd Vexation. But theſe Reports were ſtill more prejudicial to M. *la Salle*, whoſe Creditors, without enquiring into the Truth of the Matter, or expecting his return from Fort *Frontenac*, ſeiz'd all his Effects in *Canada*; though that very Fort alone, the Property whereof belonged to him, was worth twice more than all the Debts he ow'd. However it being impoſſible to ſtop the Mouth of our Enemies, who had no other Deſign, than to oblige us to give over our Enterprize, notwithſtanding the Trouble and great Charge we had been at for our Preparations; we reſolved to wait with Patience, the Opportunities, Divine Providence would preſent us with, and to purſue with Vigour and Conſtancy our Deſign.

Being thus prepar'd againſt all Diſcouragements, I went up in a Canou with one of our Savages to the Mouth of the Lake *Erie*, notwithſtanding the ſtrong Current which I maſter'd with great difficulty. I ſounded the Mouth of the Lake and found, contrary to the Relation that had been made unto me, that a Ship with a brisk Gale might ſail up to the Lake, and ſurmount the Rapidity of the Current; and that therefore with a ſtrong North, or North-Eaſt Wind, we might bring our Ship into the Lake *Erie*. I took alſo a view of the Banks of the Streight, and found that in caſe of Need, we might put ſome of our Men a-ſhore to hall the Ship, if the Wind was not ſtrong enough.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

The Author's Return to Fort Frontenac.

BEfore we could go on with our intended Diſcovery, I was oblig'd to return to Fort *Frontenac*, to bring along with me two Monks of my own Order, to help me in the Function of my Miniſtry. I left our Ship riding upon two Anchors, within a league and a half of the Lake *Erie*, in the Streight, between the ſaid Lake, and the great Fall of *Niagara*. Mr. *Charon* an Inhabitant of *Canada*, deſir'd to go with me, to avoid the ill Uſage he receiv'd from M. *Tonti*, who was an irreconcileable Enemy of all the Subjects of the King of *Spain*, having been, as he thought, hardly us'd by the *Spaniards*, in the Revolution of *Naples*, in which he was concern'd as well as his Father.

We embark'd in a Canou with one of our Savages, and fell down the Streight till we came to the great Fall, where we went a-ſhore, and carry'd our Canou over-land to the foot of the great Rock already mention'd, and from thence we continu'd our Courſe to the Mouth of the Lake *Ontario*, where we found the Barque or Brigantine we have ſpoken of, which the Sieur *la Foreſt* had brought from Fort *Frontenac*. M. *la Foreſt* having ſpent ſome Days in that place for Bartering his Commodities with the Natives, we embark'd on board his Brigantine, together with Fifteen or Sixteen Savage Women, who took the opportunity to ſail forty Leagues by Water, which otherwiſe they had been oblig'd to travel a-foot over-land through the Woods; but they not being us'd to this way of Travelling, fell ſo ſick, that their Vomiting created an inſufferable ſtink in our Ship. Being arriv'd into the River of *Aouequen*, M. *la Foreſt* exchang'd ſome Brandy for Beaver-Skins; but I muſt confeſs this Commerce of Strong-Waters was never acceptable to me; for if the Savages drink

drink but a little too much of that Liquor, they are worſe and more dangerous than mad Men. Having done our Buſineſs in that place, we ſail'd from the Southern to the Northern Coaſts of the Lake; and the Wind being favourable we quickly paſs'd by the Village which lies on the other ſide of *Keute* and *Ganeouſſe*, but were becalm'd not far from Fort *Frontenac*, which oblig'd me to get into a Canou with two Savages to manage it. We landed in the Iſland of *Goilans*, ſo nam'd from Sea-Fouls of that Name, who abound in that place, and lay their Eggs upon the Sand where they are hatch'd by the Heat of the Sun. I carry'd away along with us four Baskets full of them, which we found very reliſhing in Omelets and Pancakes.

I was kindly receiv'd by four Miſſionaries of my own Order that I found there, *viz.* Father *Gabriel de la Ribourde*, *Luke Buiſſet*, *Zenobe Mambre*, and *Milithon Watteau*, all Natives of the *Spaniſh Netherlands*. They told me that they knew how much I had ſuffer'd in my *Miſſion* during the Winter, and chiefly from that *Italian* who deſerted the Service of his Natural Prince, that is *Tonti* I have already ſpoken of. I conceal'd part of the Diſcouragements I had met with, becauſe I deſigned to engage Father *Gabriel* and *Zenobe* in our Voyage, and alſo becauſe I knew that M. *de la Salle*, whoſe Temper I was acquainted with by my own Experience, made a conſtant uſe of this famous Maxim, *Divide & impera*, to diſpoſe with a greater facility of the Men under him to compaſs his own Deſigns: And having as great a Paſſion as he to diſcover ſome New Countries, I thought it beſt to make no Complaints, which he took very kindly, and receiv'd me in a very obliging manner.

That Gentleman was Judicious, and of extraordinary Parts, and very deſirous to make himſelf famous by ſome New Diſcoveries, about which we had frequent Conferences. He told me ſeveral times

That

That he knew no Religious Order ſo fit as ours, for improving New Colonies; and he was a very good Judge in thoſe matters, having ſpent nine or ten Years in another Order, of which he had diſingag'd himſelf by Conſent of the General, who in the Act of his Diſmiſſion under his own Hand, gives this noble Character of him, That he had liv'd amongſt the Monks of his Order, without giving the leaſt ſuſpicion of *Venial Sin.* Theſe are the very Words of the Act, for I have perus'd it my ſelf. He likewiſe told me, That being perſuaded that we might be very uſeful to him in his Deſigns, he was reſolv'd to do ſomething in favour of our Order; and having call'd us together on the 27*th* of *May*, 1679. he acquainted us, That being Proprietary and Governor of Fort *Frontenac*, he would order in his Will, That no other religious Order but ours, ſhould be ſuffer'd to ſettle themſelves near the Fort; he afterwards mark'd out a Church-yard; and having created a publick Notary, he order'd him to draw up an Inſtrument, whereby the ſaid M. *la Salle* gave to our Order, the Property of Eighteen Acres of Ground along the ſide of the Lake *Ontario* near the Fort, and above a Hundred Acres more in the next Foreſt to be clear'd and grubb'd up. We accepted this Gift in the Name of our Order, and ſign'd the Deed, which was the firſt that ever was tranſacted in that Country. The Notary's Name was *la Meterie.*

This being done, he deſir'd thoſe *Franciſcans* that were to come with me, to prepare themſelves for their Voyage; but the Wind being againſt us, we had a ſufficient time for it, and to take our Meaſures concerning our dangerous Miſſion. We made frequent Viſits to the Savages, whom we had perſuaded to ſettle themſelves near the Fort, who together with their Children, whom we had taught to read and write, lamented much our Departure; and and aſſur'd us, that if we did return in a ſhort time, they would perſuade the reſt of the Inhabitants of the

the Village of *Ganeouſſe*, to come and ſettle themſelves in the Neighborhood of the Fort.

CHAP. XVIII.

An Account of our Second Embarkment from Fort Frontenac.

AFter ſome few Days, the Wind coming fair, Fathers *Gabriel*, *Zenobe*, and I, went on board the Brigantine, and in a ſhort time arriv'd in the River of the *Tſonnontouans*, which runs into the Lake *Ontario*; where we continued ſeveral Days, our Men being very buſie in bartering their Commodities with the Natives, who flock'd in great Numbers about us to ſee our Brigantine, which they admir'd, and to exchange their Skins for Knives, Guns, Powder and Shot, but eſpecially for Brandy, which they love above all things: In the mean time, we had built a ſmall Cabin of Barks of Trees about half a League in the Woods, to perform Divine Service therein without interruption, and waited till all our Men had done their Buſineſs. M. *la Salle* arrived in a Canou about eight Days after; he had taken his courſe by the Southern Coaſt of the Lake, to go to the Village of the *Tſonnontouans*, to whom he made ſeveral Preſents to engage them in our Intereſt, and remove the Jealouſie they had conceived of our Undertaking, through the ſuggeſtions of our Enemies. All theſe Impediments retarded us ſo long, that we could not reach the River *Niagara* before the 30th of *July*.

On the 4th of the ſaid Month, I went over-land to the Fall of *Niagara*, with a Serjeant call'd *la Fleur*, and thence to our Dock, within ſix Leagues of the Lake *Ontario*; but we did not find there the Ship we had built: And met with a new Misfortune; for two young Savages robb'd us of the Biſket we had

had for our ſubſiſtance, which reduc'd us to great Extremity. We found at laſt a half rotten Canou without Oars, which we mended as well as we could; and having made an Oar, we ventur'd our ſelves in that weak and ſhatter'd Canou, and went up the Streight to look for our Ship, which we found riding within a league of the pleaſant Lake *Erie*. We were very kindly receiv'd, and likewiſe very glad to find our Ship well rigg'd, and ready fitted out with all the Neceſſaries for ſailing. She carry'd five ſmall Guns, two whereof were Braſs, and three Harquebuze *a-crock*. The Beak-head was adorn'd with a flying Griffin, and an Eagle above it; and the reſt of the Ship had the ſame Ornaments as Men of War uſe to have.

The *Iroqueſe* were then returning from a Warlike Expedition with ſeveral Slaves, and were much ſurpriz'd to ſee ſo big a Ship, which they compar'd to a Fort, beyond their Limits. Several came on board, and ſeem'd to admire above all things the bigneſs of our Anchors; for they could not apprehend how we had been able to bring them through the rapid Currents of the River St. *Laurence*. This oblig'd them to uſe often the Word *Gannorom*, which in their Language ſignifies, That is wonderful. They wonder'd alſo to find there a Ship, having ſeen none when they went; and did not know from whence it came, it being about 250 Leagues from *Canada*.

Having forbid the Pilot to attempt to ſail up the Currents of the Streight till farther order, we return'd the 16th and 17th to the Lake *Ontario*, and brought up our Bark to the great Rock of *Niagara*, and anchor'd at the foot of the three Mountains, where we were oblig'd to make our *Portage*; that is, to carry over-land our Canou's and Proviſions, and other Things, above the great Fall of the River, which interrupts the Navigation: and becauſe moſt of the Rivers of that Country are interrupted with great

great Rocks, and that therefore thoſe who ſail upon the ſame, are oblig'd to go over-land above thoſe Falls, and carry upon their Backs their Canou's and other Things. They expreſs it with this Word, To make our *Portage*; of which the Reader is deſir'd to take notice, for otherwiſe the following Account, as well as the Map, would be unintelligible to many.

Father *Gabriel*, though of Sixty five Years of Age, bore with great Vigour the Fatigue of that Voyage, and went thrice up and down thoſe three Mountains, which are pretty high and ſteep. Our Men had a great deal of trouble; for they were oblig'd to make ſeveral Turns to carry the Proviſions and Ammunition, and the Portage was two Leagues long. Our Anchors were ſo big that four Men had much ado to carry one; but the Brandy we gave them was ſuch an Encouragement, that they ſurmounted cheerfully all the Difficulties of that Journey; and ſo we got on board our Ship all our Proviſions, Ammunitions, and Commodities.

While we continu'd there, M. *la Salle* told me, That he underſtood by ſome of our Men, that I very much blam'd the Intrigues of ſome Monks of *Canada* with the *Iroqueſe*, and their Neighbours of *New-York* and *New-Orange*; which oblig'd me in his preſence, to tell my Brethren the *Franciſcans*, That I perceiv'd that M. *la Salle* was minded to ſurprize me, and oblige me to revile ſome Perſons, whom he repreſented as Traders and Merchants; and then abating ſomewhat of my Tone, I concluded, That notwithſtanding the falſe Reports that had been made to him, I would entertain a good Opinion of thoſe very Perſons whom he deſign'd to make my Enemies; and that I wou'd rather give over our Enterprize than be impos'd upon at that rate. This vigorous Anſwer ſurpriz'd M. *la Salle*, who told me, That he was perſuaded that thoſe who had made him thoſe Reports, were not honeſt Men; and that therefore he would take all imaginable care of my Perſon during the Voyage

Voyage, and eſpouſe my Intereſt on all occaſions. He was Indeed afraid that I ſhould leave him, which had been a great diſappointment to his Affairs; for Father *Gabriel* would have left him alſo. That good Man was come with us without any leave of his Superior, only upon a Letter from the Provincial Commiſſioner of *Canada*, whoſe Name was *Valentin le Roux*, wherein he told M. *la Salle*, that the ſaid Father *Gabriel* might go along with him. However he did not believe that he would do ſo without an Order in Writing; and for that reaſon came ſome Days after our departure, to Fort *Frontenac*, where M. *la Salle* obtain'd that Order from him, for fear of being accus'd to have expos'd a Man of that Age to ſo dangerous a Voyage, in which he was like to periſh, as really he did; as we ſhall ſee by and by.

M. *la Salle* underſtanding that I and the ſaid Father *Gabriel*, were gone to view the great Fall of *Niagara*, he came to us with ſome Refreſhments to reconcile himſelf with me, and prevent my return to *Canada*. He met with no great difficulty; for the great deſire I had to diſcover a New Country, made me very eaſie; ſo that we return'd on board our Ship in the beginning of *Auguſt*, 1679.

CHAP. XIX.

An Account of our Third Embarkment from the Mouth of the Lake Erie.

WE have already obſerv'd, that the *Spaniards* were the firſt Diſcoverers of *Canada*, and that the *Recollets* are the firſt Religious Order, who attended the *French* Colonies in that Country. Thoſe Good Men liv'd in great Friendſhip with the Savages call'd *Hurons*, by whom they underſtood that the *Iroqueſe* made frequent Excurſions beyond *Virginia* and *New-Sweden*, near a great Lake, from whence they brought

brought a great many Slaves; which gave occaſion to the *Hurons* to call that Lake, *Erige*, or *Erike*; that is to ſay, the Lake of the *Cat*. The Inhabitants of *Canada* have ſoftned that Word, and call it *Erie*, as we have already obſerv'd.

We endeavour'd ſeveral times to ſail up that Lake; but the Wind being not ſtrong enough, we were forc'd to wait for it. In the mean time, M. *la Salle* caus'd our Men to grub up ſome Land, and ſow ſeveral ſorts of Pot-Herbs and Pulſe, for the conveniency of thoſe who ſhould ſettle themſelves there, to maintain our Correſpondence with Fort *Frontenac*. We found there a great quantity of wild Cherries and *Rocambol*, a ſort of Garlick, which grow naturally in that Ground. We left Father *Melithon*, with ſome Work-men, at our Habitation above the Fall of *Niagara*; and moſt of our Men went a-ſhore to lighten our Ships, the better to ſail up the Lake.

The Wind veering to the North-Eaſt, and the Ship being well provided, we made all the Sail we could, and with the help of Twelve Men who hall'd from the Shoar, overcame the Rapidity of the Current, and got up into the Lake. The Stream is ſo violent, that our Pilot himſelf deſpair'd of Succeſs. When it was done, we ſung *Te Deum*, and diſcharg'd our Cannon and other Fire-Arms, in preſence of a great many *Iroqueſe*, who came from a Warlike Expedition againſt the Savages of *Tintonha*; that is to ſay, the *Nation of the Meadows*, who live above four hundred Leagues from that Place. The *Iroqueſe* and their Priſoners were much ſurpriz'd to ſee us in the Lake and, did not think before that, we ſhould be able to overcome the Rapidity of the Current: They cry'd ſeveral times *Gannorom*, to ſhew their Admiration. Some of the *Iroqueſe* had taken the meaſure of our Ship, and immediately went for *New-York*, to give notice to the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* of our ſailing into the Lake: For thoſe Nations affording their Commodi-

ties Cheaper than the *French*, are alſo more belov'd by the Natives.

On the 7th of *Auguſt*, 1679. we went on board being in all four and thirty Men, including two *Recollets* who came to us, and ſail'd from the Mouth of the Lake *Erie*, ſteering our Courſe Weſt-South-Weſt, with a favourable Wind; and though the Enemies of our Diſcovery had given out, on purpoſe to deter us from our Enterprize, That the Lake *Erie* was full of Rocks and Sands, which render'd the Navigation impracticable, we run above twenty Leagues during the Night, though we ſounded all that while. The next Day the Wind being more favourable, we made above five and forty Leagues, keeping at an equal diſtance from the Banks of the Lake, and doubled a Cape to the Weſt-ward, which we call'd the Cape of St. *Francis*. The next Day we doubled two other Capes, and met with no manner of Rocks or Sands. We diſcover'd a pretty large Iſland towards the South-weſt, about ſeven or eight Leagues from the Northern Coaſt; that Iſland faces the Streight that comes from the Lake *Huron*.

The 10th, very early in the Morning, we paſs'd between that Iſland and 7 or 8 leſſer ones; and having ſail'd near another, which is nothing but Sand, to the weſt of the Lake, we came to an Anchor at the Mouth of the Streight, which runs from the Lake *Huron* into that of *Erie*. The 11th, we went farther into the Streight, and paſs'd between two ſmall Iſlands, which make one of the fineſt Proſpects in the World. This Streight is finer than that of *Niagara*, being thirty Leagues long, and every-where one League broad, except in the middle, which is wider, forming the Lake we have call'd St. *Claire*. The Navigation is eaſie on both ſides, the Coaſt being low and even. It runs directly from North to South.

The Country between thoſe two Lakes is very well ſituated, and the Soil very fertile. The Banks of the Streight

Streight are vaſt Meadows, and the Proſpect is terminated with ſome Hills cover'd with Vineyards, Trees bearing good Fruit, Groves, and Foreſts, ſo well diſpos'd, that one would think Nature alone could not have made, without the Help of Art, ſo charming a Proſpect. That Country is ſtock'd with Stags, Wild-Goats, and Bears, which are good for Food, and not fierce as in other Countries; ſome think they are better than our Pork. Turkey-Cocks and Swans are there alſo very common; and our Men brought ſeveral other Beaſts and Birds, whoſe Names are unknown to us, but they are extraordinary reliſhing.

The Foreſts are chiefly made up of Walnut-trees Cheſnut-trees, Plum-trees, and Pear-trees, loaded with their own Fruit and Vines. There is alſo abundance of Timber fit for Building; ſo that thoſe who ſhall be ſo happy as to inhabit that Noble Country, cannot but remember with Gratitude thoſe who have diſcover'd the way, by venturing to ſail upon an unknown Lake for above one hundred Leagues. That charming Streight lies between 40 and 41 Degrees of Northren Latitude.

CHAP. XX.

An Account of what happened in our Paſſage from the Lake Erie, *unto the Lake* Huron.

I Had often advis'd M. *la Salle* to make a ſettlement upon the Streight, between the Lake *Erie* and *Ontario*, where the Fiſhery is more plentiful; for that Settlement would have been very advantageous to us, to maintain our Communication with Fort *Frontenac*. I told him alſo, that it were fit to leave in that Settlement the Smith he, and M. *de Motte*, had promis'd to the *Iroqueſe*; and that it would be a means to engage that wild Nation in our Intereſt,

and to trade only with us, whereby he would grow rich in a little time: But M. *la Salle*, and the Adventurers who were with him, would not hearken to my advice; and told me, that they would make no Settlement within 100 Leagues of their Fort, leſt other *Europeans* ſhould get before them into the Country they were going to diſcover. This was their pretence; but I ſoon obſerv'd that their Intention was to buy all the Furrs and Skins of the remoteſt Savages, who, as they thought, did not know their Value; and ſo inrich themſelves in one ſingle Voyage.

I endeavour'd alſo to perſwade him to make a Settlement upon this charming Streight; for being in the midſt of ſo many Nations of Savages, we could not but have a good Trade amongſt them. This was the Argument I made uſe of; but the main Reaſon, which I kept to my ſelf, was to have an Opportunity to preach the Goſpel to thoſe ignorant Nations. M. *la Salle* would by no means hearken to my Advice, and told me he wonder'd at my Propoſal, conſidering the great Paſſion I had a few Months before for the Diſcovery of a New Country.

The Current of that Streight is very violent, but not half ſo much as that of *Niagara*; and therefore we ſail'd up with a brisk Gale, and got into the Streight between the Lake *Huron*, and the Lake St. *Claire*; this laſt is very ſhallow, eſpecially at its Mouth. The Lake *Huron* falls into this of St. *Claire* by ſeveral Canals, which are commonly interrupted by Sands and Rocks. We ſounded all of them, and found one at laſt about one League broad without any Sands, its Depth being every where from three to eight Fathoms Water. We ſail'd up that Canal, but were forc'd to drop our Anchors near the Mouth of the Lake; for the extraordinary quantity of Waters which came down from the upper Lake, and that of *Illinois*, becauſe a ſtrong North-Weſt Wind, had ſo much augmented the Rapidity of the current of this Streight, that it was as violent as that of *Niagara*.

The

The Wind turning Southerly, we ſailed again; and with the help of twelve Men, who hall'd our Ship from the Shoar, got ſafely the 23d of *Auguſt* into the Lake *Huron*. We ſung *Te Deum* a ſecond time, to return our Thanks to the Almighty for our happy Navigation. We found in that Lake a large Bay, the Banks of which the Ancient *Hurons* inhabited. They were converted to the Chriſtian Religion by the firſt *Franciſcans* that came into *Canada*; but the *Iroqueſe* have in a great meaſure deſtroy'd that Nation.

CHAP. XXI.

An Account of our Navigation on the Lake Huron *to* Miſſilimakinak.

HAving thus travelled above 300 Leagues from *Quebec* to the Lake *Huron*, notwithſtanding the rapid Currents and Lakes we went through, we continued our Voyage from the Mouth of this Lake, Steering our Courſe North-North-Eaſt; but the next day, finding our ſelves near the Land, we ſteer'd North-North-Weſt, and croſs'd a Bay call'd *Sakinam*, which may be thirty Leagues Broad. The 24th, we run the ſame Courſe, but were becalm'd between ſome Iſlands, where we found but two Fathoms Water, which oblig'd us to make an eaſie Sail part of the Night, to look for a good Anchorage, but in vain; and the Wind turning then Weſterly, we bore to the North, to avoid the Coaſt till the Day appeared. We ſounded all the Night long, becauſe our Pilot, though a very underſtanding Man, was ſomewhat negligent. The 25th, we lay becalmed till Noon, but then run North-Weſt with a brisk Southerly Gale. The Wind turning South-Weſt, we bore to the North to double a Cape; but then the Wind grew ſo violent, that we were forced to lie by all the Night.

The 26th, the Storm continuing, we brought down our Main Yards and Top-Maſt, and let the Ship drive at the Mercy of the Wind, knowing no place to run into to ſhelter our ſelves. M. *la Salle*, notwithſtanding he was a Couragious Man, began to fear, and told us we were undone; and therefore every Body fell upon his Knees to ſay his Prayers, and prepare himſelf for Death, except our Pilot, whom we could never oblige to pray; and he did nothing all that while but curſe and ſwear againſt M. *la Salle*, who, as he ſaid, had brought him thither to make him periſh in a naſty Lake, and loſe the Glory he had acquired by his long and happy Navigations on the Ocean: However the Wind being ſomewhat abated, we hoiſted up our Sail, and ſo we drove not above two Leagues. The 27th in the Morning, we continued our Courſe North-Weſt with a South-Eaſt Wind, which carry'd us the ſame Day to *Miſſilimakinak*, where we Anchor'd in a Bay at ſix Fathom-Water, upon a ſlimy white Bottom. That Bay is ſheltred by the Coaſt, and a Bank lying from the South-Weſt to the North; but it lies expos'd to the South Winds, which are very violent in that Country.

Miſſilimakinak is a Neck of Land to the North of the Mouth of the Streight, through which the Lake of the *Illinois* diſcharges it ſelf into the Lake *Huron*. That Canal is about three Leagues long and one broad. About fifteen Leagues to the Eaſtward of *Miſſilimakinak*, there is another point at the Mouth of the Streight, whereby the Upper Lake runs into that of *Huron*; which Streight is about 5 Leagues broad at its Mouth, and about fifteen Leagues long; but it grows narrow towards the Fall of *St. Mary*, which is a rapid Stream interrupted by ſeveral Rocks. However a Canou may go up by one ſide, but it requires a great Fatigue; and therefore the ſafeſt and eaſieſt way is to make a Portage above the Fall, to go and trade with the Savages inhabiting the Banks of the Upper Lake.

We

We lay between two different Nations of Savages; thoſe who inhabit the Point of *Miſſilimakinak* are call'd *Hurons*, and the others, who are about three or four Leagues more Northward, are *Outtaouatz*. Thoſe Savages were equally ſurpriz'd to ſee a Ship in their Country; and the noiſe of our Cannon, of which we made a General Diſcharge, fill'd them with great aſtoniſhment. We went to ſee the *Outtaouatz*, and celebrated Maſs in their Habitation. M. *la Salle* was finely dreſs'd, having a Scarlet Cloak with a broad Gold Lace, and moſt of his Men with their Arms attended him. The Chief Captains of that People received us with great Civilities after their own way, and ſome of them came on Board with us to ſee our Ship, which rode all that while in the Bay or Creek I have ſpoken of. It was a diverting Proſpect to ſee every Day above ſixſcore Canou's about it, and the Savages ſtaring and admiring that fine Woodden Canou as they call'd it. They brought us abundance of Whitings, and ſome Trouts of 50 and 60 pound Weight.

We went the next Day to pay a Viſit to the *Hurons*, who inhabit a riſing Ground on a Neck of Land over againſt *Miſſilimakinak*. Their Villages are fortify'd with Palliſado's of 25 foot high, and always ſituated upon Eminences or Hills. They received us with more Reſpect than the *Outtaouatz*, for they made a triple Diſcharge of all the ſmall Guns they had, having learned from ſome *Europeans*, that it is the greateſt Civility among us. However, they took ſuch a Jealouſie to our Ship, that, as we underſtood ſince, they endeavoured to make our Expedition odious to all the Nations about them.

The *Hurons* and *Outtaouatz* are in Confederacy together againſt the *Iroqueſe* their Common Enemy. They ſow *Indian* Corn, which is their ordinary Food; for they have nothing elſe to live upon, except ſome Fiſh they take in the Lakes. They boil it with their *Sagamittee*, which is a kind of Broth made with

Water and the Flour of the Corn, which they beat in a Mortar, made of the Trunk of a Tree, which they make hollow with Fire.

There is another Settlement of Savages near the Fall of *St. Mary*. The *French* call them *Leapers*, becauſe they live near the great Fall which they call a *Leap*. Theſe ſubſiſt together by Hunting Staggs, Elks, Beavers, and other Beaſts, as alſo upon the Whitings we have already ſpoken of; who are taken with ſo much difficulty in this Place, that none but themſelves are able to catch any. They Sow no *Indian* Corn, becauſe of the thick Fogs, that are commonly on the Banks of the Upper Lake, which ſtifle Corn before it grows.

Miſſilimakinak and the Fall of *St. Mary*, are the two moſt conſiderable Paſſages that all the Savages have of the Weſt and North; for there are above two hundred Canou's that come through theſe Paſſes every Year, to carry their Commodities to the *French* at *Montreal* below Fort *Frontenac*.

Our Enterprize had been very ſucceſsful hitherto; and we had reaſon to expect, that every Body would have contributed to carry on vigorouſly our great Deſign to promote the Glory of God, as well as the Good of our Colonies: However, ſome of our own Men oppoſed it as much as they could; they repreſented us to the *Outtaouats*, and their Neighbours as dangerous and ambitious Adventurers, who deſign'd to engroſs all the Trade of Furrs and Skins, and invade their Liberty, the only thing which is dear to that People. The fifteen Men that M. *la Salle* had ſent before him, had been ſeduced and almoſt drawn from his Service. The Goods which he had given them to exchange with the Natives, were diſſipated and waſted; and inſtead of advancing as far as the *Illinois*, as they were order'd, they remain'd amongſt the *Hurons*, notwithſtanding the Exhortations and the Prayers of M. *Tonti* who Commanded them.

Our

Our Men went into the Country to trade with the Natives, and engaged themſelves too far; ſo that they did not return to *Miſſilimakinak* till *November*: M. *la Salle* being told that the Winds made the Navigation of the Lake very dangerous in the beginning of the Winter, reſolved to continue his Voyage without tarrying any longer for the return of his Men.

CHAP. XXII.

An Account of our Sailing from Miſſilimakinak, *into the Lake of the* Illinois.

ON the 2d of *September* we weighed Anchor, and Sail'd into the Lake of the *Illinois*; and came to an Iſland juſt at the Mouth of the Bay of the *Puans*, lying about forty Leagues from *Miſſilimakinak*: It is Inhabited by ſome Savages of the Nation call'd *Poutouatami*'s, with whom ſome of the Men M. *la Salle*, had ſent the Year before, had bartered a great quantity of Furrs and Skins. We found our Men in the Iſland, who began to be very Impatient, having ſo long waited our Arrival.

The chief of that Nation had been formerly in *Canada*, and had an extraordinary Reſpect for Count *Frontenac*, who was Governor thereof; and upon that Account receiv'd us with all the Civility imaginable, and caus'd his Men to Dance the *Calumet*, or Pipe, before us. This is a peice of Civility we ſhall deſcribe anon. Our Ship was riding in the Bay about thirty Paces from the furthermoſt Point of the Land, at a pretty good Anchorage, where we rode ſafely, notwithſtanding a violent Storm which laſted four Days. And upon this occaſion, I cannot omit, without Injuſtice, the Generoſity of that brave Captain, who ſeeing our Ship toſs'd up by the Waves, and not knowing it was able to reſiſt, ventur'd himſelf in his little Canou, and came to our aſſiſtance

He

He had the good luck to get ſafe on Board, and told us he would at all times venture his Life, for ſaving the Children of *Onnontio*, Governor of *Canada*, who was his particular Friend. It muſt be obſerved, that the Governor is called *Onnontio* by all the Savages.

M. *la Salle* without asking any other Body's Advice, reſolv'd to ſend back his Ship to *Niagara*, laden with Furrs and Skins to diſcharge his Debts; our Pilot and five Men with him were therefore ſent back, and ordered to return with all imaginable ſpeed, to join us towards the Southren Parts of the Lake, where we ſhould ſtay for them among the *Illinois*. They Sailed the 18th of *September* with a Weſterly Wind, and fir'd a Gun to take their leave. Tho' the Wind was favourable, it was never known what Courſe they ſteer'd, nor how they periſh'd; for after all the Enquiries we have been able to make, we could never learn any thing elſe but the following Particulars.

The Ship came to an Anchor to the North of the Lake of the *Illinois*, where ſhe was ſeen by ſome Savages, who told us that they had adviſed our Men to Sail along the Coaſt, and not towards the middle of the Lake, becauſe of the Sands that make the Navigation dangerous when there is any high Wind. Our Pilot, as I ſaid before, was diſſatisfied, and would ſteer as he pleaſed, without hearkning to the Advice of the Savages, who, generally ſpeaking, have more Senſe than the *Europeans* think at firſt; but the Ship was hardly a League from the Coaſt, when it was toſs'd up by a violent Storm in ſuch a manner, that our Men were never heard of ſince; and it is ſuppos'd that the Ship ſtruck upon a Sand, and was there bury'd. This was a great loſs for M. *la Salle* and other Adventurers; for that Ship, with its Cargo, coſt above Sixty thouſand Livres. This will ſeem incredible to many, but not to thoſe who will conſider that the Rigging, Anchors, and Goods were brought by Canou's from *Quebec* to Fort *Frontenac*; which is ſuch a vaſt Charge, that the Carriage of every

every hundred Weight, either of Anchors, Cables, and the Like, coſt eleven Livers.

CHAP. XXIII.

An Account of our Embarkment in Canou's to continue our Diſcovery, from the Bay of Puans, *to the* Miami's *on the Lake of the* Illinois.

WE left the *Poutouatamis* on the 19th of *September* to continue our Voyage, being fourteen Men in all, in four Canou's. I had the Conduct of the ſmalleſt, though it carry'd 500 Weight and two Men; but my Fellow being newly come from *Europe*, and conſequently unskill'd to manage theſe ſort of Boats, I had the whole trouble upon me in any ſtormy Weather. The other four Canou's were laden with a Smith's Forge, and Inſtruments, and Tools for Carpenters, Joyners, and Sawyers, beſides our Goods and Arms.

We ſteer'd to the South towards the Continent from which the Iſland of the *Poutouatamis* is near forty Leagues diſtant; but about the middle of the way, in the Night time, we were ſurprized with a ſudden Storm, whereby we were in great danger. The Waves came into our Canou's; and the Night was ſo dark, that we had much ado to keep Company together: However, we got a-ſhore the next Day, where we continued till the Lake grew calm again, which was four Days after. In the mean time our Savage went a Hunting, but could kill nothing but a *Porcupine*, which made our Gourds and *Indian* Corn more reliſhing.

The Weather being fair, we continued our Voyage the 25th, and Row'd all the Day, and beſt part of the Night; all along the Weſtern Coaſt of the Lake of the *Illinois*; but the Wind growing too high for us, we thought fit to Land upon a Rock, where

where we had nothing to ſhelter our ſelves againſt the Snow and Rain but our Blankets. We continu'd there two Days, having made a little Fire with the Wood the Waves did ſupply us with. The 28th, we proceeded on our Voyage; but the Wind forc'd us towards Night on a Rock cover'd with thick Buſhes, where we remain'd three Days, and there made an end of all our Proviſions, which conſiſted of Gourds and *Indian* Corn we had brought from the *Poutouatami's*. Our Canou's were ſo loaded, that we could not provide our ſelves for a longer time, and we expected to find proviſions enough in our way.

We left that diſmal Place the 1*ſt* of *October*, and after twelve Leagues rowing, though faſting, came to another Village of the *Poutouatami's*, who came upon the Shoar to receive us: But M. *la Salle* would not ſuffer any one to land, leſt his Men ſhould run away; and notwithſtanding the bad Weather, we follow'd him three Leagues farther. We were in ſo great danger, that he flung himſelf into the Water with his three Men, and carry'd a-ſhore their Canou upon their Shoulders, or elſe it had been broken to pieces. We were all oblig'd to do the ſame; and by theſe means ſav'd our Canou's and Goods. I carry'd upon my Back that good Man Father *Gabriel*, whoſe great Age did not permit him to venture himſelf into the Water.

As we had no manner of Acquaintance with the Savages of the Village near which we landed, our Men prepar'd themſelves to make a vigorous Defence in caſe they were attack'd; and in order to it, poſſeſſed our ſelves of a riſing Ground, where we could not be ſurpriz'd, and where we might make head againſt a great number of Savages. We ſent afterwards three Men to buy Proviſions in the Village with the *Calumet* or Pipe of Peace, which the *Poutouatami's* of the Iſland had given us. I had forgot to mention that when they made us that Preſent, they obſerv'd a great

great many Ceremonies; and becauſe that *Calumet* of Peace is the moſt ſacred Thing amongſt the Savages, I think fit to deſcribe the ſame in the next Chapter.

CHAP. XXIV.

A Deſcription of the Calumet, *or great Pipe.*

THis *Calumet* is the moſt myſterious Thing in the World among the Savages of the Continent of the Northern *America*; for it is us'd in all their important Tranſactions: However, it is nothing elſe but a large Tobacco-Pipe made of Red, Black, or White Marble: The Head is finely poliſh'd, and the *Quill*, which is commonly two Foot and a half long; is made of a pretty ſtrong Reed, or Cane, adorn'd with Feathers of all Colours, interlac'd with Locks of Womens Hair. They tie to it two Wings of the moſt curious Birds they find, which makes their *Calumet* not much unlike *Mercury*'s Wand, or that Staff Ambaſſadors did formerly carry when they went to treat of Peace. They ſheath that Reed into the Neck of Birds they call *Huars*, which are as big as our Geeſe, and ſpotted with Black and White; or elſe of a ſort of Ducks who make their Neſts upon Trees, though Water be their ordinary Element, and whoſe Feathers are of many different Colours. However, every Nation adorns the *Calumet* as they think fit, according to their own Genius, and the Birds they have in their Country.

A Pipe, ſuch as I have deſcrib'd it, is a Paſs and ſafe Conduct amongſt all the Allies of the Nation who has given it; and in all Embaſſies, the Ambaſſadors carry that *Calumet* as the Symbol of Peace, which is always reſpected; for the Savages are generally perſuaded, that a great Misfortune would befal 'em, if they violated the Publick Faith of the

Calumet.

Calumet. All their Enterprizes, Declarations of War, or Concluſions of Peace, as well as all the reſt of their Ceremonies, are ſealed, if I may be permitted to ſay ſo, with this *Calumet*. They fill that Pipe with the beſt Tobacco they have, and then preſent it to thoſe with whom they have concluded any great Affair, and ſmoak out of the ſame after them. I had certainly periſh'd in my Voyage, had it not been for this *Calumet* or Pipe, as the Reader will obſerve in peruſing the following Account.

Our three Men, provided with this Pipe, as a Paſs, and very well Arm'd, went to the little Village of the Savages, which was about three Leagues from the place where we landed; but they found no body therein; for the Savages having heard that we had refus'd to land at the other Village, thought we were Enemies, and therefore had left their Habitation. Our Men finding no body in their Cabins took ſome *Indian* Corn, and left inſtead of it ſome Goods, to let them ſee that we were no Robbers, nor their Enemies. However, the Savages, to the number of twenty Men, arm'd with Axes, ſmall Guns, Bows, and a ſort of Club, which in their Language they call *Break-heads*, advanced near the Place where we ſtood; whereupon M. *la Salle*, with four Men very well arm'd, went toward them to ſpeak with them, and deſired them to come near us, for fear, as he ſaid, a Party of our Men, who were gone a hunting, ſhould meet with them and kill them. They were perſuaded to ſit down at the foot of the Eminence where we were poſted, and M. *la Salle* ſpoke to them all the while of the ſubject matter of his Voyage, which he had undertaken for their good and advantage, as he told them. This was only to amuſe them till our three Men return'd; who appearing with the *Calumet* of Peace, the Savages made a great Shout, and roſe, and began to dance. We made them ſome Excuſe becauſe of our Men having taken ſome of their Corn, and told them

them they had left the true Value of it in Goods; which they took ſo well, that they ſent immediately for more, and gave us the next Day as much as we could conveniently carry in our Canou's. They retir'd towards the Evening; and M. *la Salle* ordered ſome Trees to be Cut down, and laid croſs the Way, to prevent any Surprize from the Savages.

The next Morning about ten a Clock, the Oldeſt of them came to us with their *Calumet* of Peace, and entertained us with ſome Wild Goats they had taken. We returned them our Thanks, and preſented them with ſome Axes, Knives, and ſeveral little Toys for their Wives, with which they were very much pleaſed.

CHAP. XXV.

A Continuation of our Diſcovery; with an Account of our Navigation to the farther end of the Lake of the Illinois *in our Canou's.*

WE left that place the 2d of *October*, and continued our Voyage all along the Coaſt of the Lake, which is ſo ſteep that we could hardly find any place to Land; and the Violence of the Wind obliged us to drag our Canou's ſometimes to the top of the Rocks, to prevent their being daſh'd in pieces by the Waves. The ſtormy Weather laſted four Days, during which we ſuffered very much; for every time we went a-ſhore we were forced to ſtep into the Water, and carry our Canou's upon our Shoulders, and to do the like when we embarked again. The Water being very cold, moſt of us were ſick, and our Proviſions fail'd us again; which, together with the Fatigues of Rowing, caus'd Old Father *Gabriel* to faint away in ſuch a manner, that I verily thought he could not live

live; however, I brought him again to his Senſes by means of ſome Confection of *Hyacinth*, which I found very uſeful in our Voyage. We had no other Subſiſtance but a handful of *Indian* Corn once every four and twenty Hours, which we roaſted, or elſe boiled in Water; and yet we row'd almoſt every Day from Morning 'till Night. Our Men found ſome Hawthorn-Berries and other wild Fruit, which they eat ſo greedily, that moſt of them fell ſick, and were thought to be poiſon'd; yet the more we ſuffer'd, the more by the Grace of God I was ſtrong and vigorous; ſo that I could often out-row all our other Canou's.

Being in that diſtreſs, He that takes care of the meaneſt Creatures, afforded us an unexpected Relief; We ſaw upon the Coaſt a great many Ravens and Eagles; from whence we conjectur'd that there was ſome Prey; and having landed on that Place, we found above the half of a fat wild Goat, which the Wolves had ſtrangled. This Proviſion was very acceptable to us, and the rudeſt of our Men could not but praiſe the Divine Providence, who took ſo particular a care of us.

Having thus refreſh'd our ſelves, we continu'd our Voyage directly to the Southren Parts of the Lake, finding every day the Country finer, and the Weather more temperate. On the 16th of *October*, we met with abundance of Game: Our Savage kill'd ſeveral Staggs and wild Goats, and our Men a great many Turkey-Cocks very fat and big, wherewith we provided our ſelves for ſeveral Days, and ſo embark'd again. On the 18th, we came to the farther end of the Lake, where we landed: Our Men were immediately ſent to view the Country round about that Place, and found a great quantity of ripe Grapes, each Grain of which was as big as a Damaſcen: We fell'd ſeveral Trees to gather them, and made pretty good Wine, which we kept in Gourds, and bury'd in Sand, to prevent its growing

ſowre:

ſowre. All the Trees in that Country are loaded with Vines, which, if cultivated, would make as good Wine as any in *Europe*. That fruit was more reliſhing to us than Fleſh, becauſe we wanted Bread.

Our Men diſcovered ſome freſh Prints of Mens Feet, which obliged us to ſtand upon our Guard, without making any noiſe till we had reſted ſome time. That Order was not long obſerv'd; for one of our Men having eſpy'd a Bear upon a Tree, ſhot him down Dead, and dragg'd him to our Cabins. M. *la Salle* was very angry with him, and to avoid any Surprize, put a Sentinel near our Canou's, under which we had put our Goods to ſhelter 'em from the Rain.

There were ſixſcore Savages of the Nation of the *Outtouagamis* inhabiting the Bay of *Puans*, encamped not far from us; who having heard the Noiſe our Man had made, took the Alarm, and ſent ſome of their Men to diſcover who we were. Theſe creeping upon their Bellies, and keeping great Silence, came in the Night to our Canou's, and ſtole away the Coat of M. *la Salle*'s Footman, and part of the Goods that were under it: But the Sentinel having heard ſome Noiſe, called us, and every body run to his Arms. The Savages being diſcover'd, and thinking we were more numerous, cry'd, That they were Friends; but we anſwered them, That Friends did not come in ſo unſeaſonable Hours; and that they looked rather like Robbers, who deſigned to murther us: Their Captain reply'd, That having heard the Noiſe of a Gun, and knowing that none of their Neighbours uſe Fire-Arms, they thought we were a Party of *Iroqueſe*, and were come with a Deſign to murther them; but that underſtanding we were ſome *Europeans* of *Canada*, whom they lov'd as their Brethren, they could hardly wait till Day to viſit us, and ſmoak in our *Calumet*, or large Pipe. This is the uſual Complement of the Savages, and the greateſt Mark they can give of their Affection.

We ſeemed to be ſatisfied with their Reaſons, and gave leave to four of them only to come to us, telling them that we would not ſuffer a great number becauſe their Youth was addicted to ſteal, and that our Men could not ſuffer it. Four Old Men came to us, whom we entertain'd till Day, and then they retir'd. After they were gone, we found we had been robb'd; and knowing the Genius of the Savages, and that if we did ſuffer this Affront, we ſhould be expos'd every Night to their Inſults; it was reſolv'd to exact Satisfaction from them: Accordingly M. *la Salle* went abroad with ſome of our Men, to endeavour to take ſome of them Priſoners; and having diſcovered one of their Hunters, he ſeiz'd him, and examin'd him concerning the Robbery they had committed: He confeſt the Fact, with all the Circumſtances; whereupon he left him to the cuſtody of two Men; and advancing farther into the Country, took another; whom he brought along with him, and having ſhew'd him his Companion, ſent him back to tell their Captain, That he would Kill him, unleſs they return'd what they had robb'd.

CHAP. XXVI.

An Account of the Peace made between us and the Outtouagami's.

THE Savages were mightily puzzl'd at the Meſſage ſent by M. *la Salle*; for having cut in pieces the Coat, and other Goods they had ſtoll'n, and divided the Buttons, they could not make a full Reſtitution; and therefore they reſolv'd to deliver their Man by force; and accordingly the next Morning, *October* 30. they advanced to attack us. The *Peninſula* where we were Encamp'd, was ſeparated from the Foreſt, where the Savages lay, by a little ſandy Plain; and there being near the Wood two or three Eminences, M. *la Salle* reſolv'd to poſſeſs himſelf of the higher

higher, and detach'd five Men for that Service, following himſelf at a little diſtance with the reſt, every one having roll'd his Covering about the left Arm, to defend themſelves againſt the Arrows of the Savages; for there was not above eight of them who had Fire-Arms.

The Savages ſeeing our Men advancing up to them, were frighted; and the youngeſt retired behind a great Tree, but their Captains ſtood their ground, while we poſſeſſed our ſelves of the Eminence I have already mention'd. I left the two *Franciſcans* reading the uſual Prayers, and went with our Men to exhort them to their Duty; for having ſeen ſome Battles and Sieges in *Europe*, I was very little afraid of the Savages. I ſaw two of our Men turning pale; but when I had ſpoken to them, they ſeemed hearty enough; and M. *la Salle* was mightily pleas'd with my Exhortations. However I conſider'd the conſequences this Quarrel might have, and how advantagious and Chriſtian-like it would be to prevent the Effuſion of Blood, and end it in a friendly manner; therefore I advanced towards the oldeſt Savage, who ſeeing me without any Arms, thought I came with a deſign to be Mediator, and received me with Civility; but in the mean time, one of our Men having obſerved, that one of the Savages had a piece of the Cloth they had ſtoll'n about his Head, came up to him, and ſnatch'd it away. That vigorous Action ſo much terrify'd the Savages, that though they were near ſixſcore Men againſt eleven, they preſented me the Pipe or *Calumet* of Peace, which I received. M. *la Salle* having paſs'd his word that they might come ſafe to him, two old Men told him in a Speech, That they did not approve what their young Men had done: That they would have reſtor'd the Goods taken, if it had been poſſible; but that having been cut in pieces, they could do no more than offer to reſtore what was not ſpoiled, and pay for the reſt. They preſented us at the ſame time with ſome

Gowns made of Beavers-Skins to appeaſe M. *la Salle*, who having frown'd a little, told them, That as he deſign'd to wrong or affront no body, he would neither ſuffer any wrong or affront to be put upon him; but that ſeeing they did not approve what their Youth had done, and were willing to make ſatisfaction for the ſame, he accepted their Offers, and would be their Friend. The Conditions were fully perform'd, and the Peace happily concluded without farther Hoſtility.

The next Day was ſpent in Dancing, Feaſting, and Speeches; and the Chief Captain having taken a particular notice of the Behaviour of the *Franciſcans*, ſaid, *Theſe Grey Coats we value very much; they go bareſoot as well as we: They ſcorn our Beaver-Gowns, and refuſe all other Preſents: They carry no Arms to kill us: They flatter and make much of our Children, and give them Knives and other Toys, without expecting any Reward. Thoſe amongſt us who have been in* Canada, *tell us, That* Onnontio (ſo they call the Governor) *loves them very much; and that they have quitted all to come to ſee us. Therefore be pleas'd, Thou who art Captain of theſe Men, to leave amongſt us one of theſe Grey Coats, whom we ſhall bring to our Village, when we have kill'd wild Bulls, and make much of him. Thou art likewiſe Maſter of theſe Warriours, and therefore remain amongſt us, inſtead of going among the* Illinois, *who have reſolv'd to murther thee and all thy Soldiers: And how canſt thou reſiſt ſo great a Nation?*

The Captain of the Savages told us, that the *Illinois* had burnt alive an *Iroqueſe*, who confeſs'd that the War the *Iroqueſe* made againſt them, had been fomented by the Inhabitants of *Canada*, who hated them. He told us alſo many other things, which frighted our Men, and made M. *la Salle* very melancholly; for all the Savages we had already met, had told us almoſt the ſame thing. However, knowing how great was the Malice of our Enemies, and therefore ſuſpecting that theſe things might have been ſuggeſted

geſted to the Savages, in order to oblige us to give over our Enterprize; or elſe that it was a Contrivance of the Neighbours of the *Illinois*, who were afraid that they ſhould grow too powerful, if we taught them the uſe of Fire-Arms, we reſolv'd to go on with our Voyage, taking in the mean time all neceſſary Precautions for our Security. We told the *Outtouagami's*, That we were much oblig'd to them for their kind Offers and Advice; but that we were not afraid of the *Illinois*; for the *Spirits* know how to gain the Friendſhip of any Nation, by Reaſon or by Force. 'Tis to be obſerv'd, that the Savages being not able to conceive how the *Europeans* can have more Wit than they, and admiring ſome Toys and other things we bring from *Europe*, own that they are but Men, but that we are *Spirits*, and therefore call us ſo.

The next Day, *November* 1. we embark'd on the Lake of the *Illinois*, and came to the Mouth of the River of the *Miami's*, which runs from the South, and falls into the Lake. We had appointed that Place for our Rendezvous, and expected to meet there the twenty Men we had left at *Miſſilimakinak*; who being order'd to come along the other Coaſt of the Lake, had a much ſhorter cut than we, and beſides their Canou's were not ſo much loaded as ours. However, we found no body there, nor any Mark whereby it could appear that they had been in that Place. We reſolv'd to tell M. *la Salle*, that it was not fit to tarry any longer for them, nor expoſe our ſelves to the Hardſhip of the Winter; and that it would be then very difficult to meet with the *Illinois*, becauſe they divided themſelves into Tribes or Families, to ſubſiſt more conveniently; That if we were forc'd to remain there during the Winter, and that the Game ſhould come to fail us, all his Men would certainly periſh with Hunger; whereas we might expect to find ſome *Indian* Corn amongſt the *Illinois*, who would rather ſupply with Proviſions

fourteen Men than two and thirty. We told him likewiſe, that it would be in a manner impoſſible to continue our Voyage till the Winter was over, if he tarry'd any longer, becauſe the Rivers would be frozen all over, and therefore we could not make uſe of our Canou's. Notwithſtanding theſe Reaſons, M. *la Salle* told us, that it was neceſſary to expect the reſt of his Men, becauſe we ſhould be then in a Condition to diſcover our ſelves to the *Illinois*, and make an Alliance with them; whereas, we ſhould be expos'd to their Mercy and Scorn, if we offer'd to enter into their Country with ſo few Men; but in the mean time he would endeavour to meet with ſome of that Nation, and gain them by preſents to learn their Language; concluding, that although all his Men ſhould run away, he would remain alone with our Savage, and find means to mentain the three Miſſionaries, meaning I and my two Brethren.

Having therefore call'd his Men together, he told them, That he was reſolved to expect the reſt of their Companions; and propos'd to build a Fort in that Place for ſecuring our Ship; for we did not knowt hen that it had periſh'd; as alſo to ſecure our Goods and our ſelves too, in caſe of any Diſgrace. Our Men ſeemed very much diſſatisfied; but he us'd ſo many Reaſons, that they told him at laſt, they would entirely follow his Direction.

CHAP. XXVII.

An Account of the Building of a Fort and a Houſe near the River Miamis.

JUST at the Mouth of the River, there was an Eminence, with a kind of a Platform naturally fortyfi'd: It was pretty high and ſteep, of a Triangular Form, defended on two ſides by the River, and on the other by a deep Ditch, which the Fall

Fall of Waters had made. We fell'd the Trees that were on the top of that Hill, and having clear'd the ſame from Buſhes for about two Musket-ſhot, we began to build a redoubt of Forty foot long, and eighty broad, with great ſquare pieces of Timber laid one upon the other; and prepared a great Number of Stakes of about twenty five Foot long, to drive into the Ground, to make our Fort the more unacceſſible on the River ſide. We imploy'd the whole Month of *November* about that Work, which was very hard, though we had no other Food but the Bears-Fleſh our Savage killed. Thoſe Beaſts are very common in that place, becauſe of the great quantity of Grapes they find there; but their Fleſh being too fat and luſcious, our Men began to be weary of it, and deſired leave to go a hunting, to kill ſome wild Goats. M. *la Salle* deny'd them that Liberty, which cauſed ſome Murmurs amongſt them; and it was but unwillingly that they continued their Work. This together with the approach of the Winter, and the apprehenſion M. *la Salle* had that his Ship was loſt, made him very melancholy, though he concealed it as much as he could. We had made a Cabin, wherein we perform'd Divine Service every *Sunday*, and Father *Gabriel* and I, who preached alternatively, took care to take ſuch Texts as were ſuitable to our preſent Circumſtances, and fit to inſpire us with Courage, Concord, and Brotherly Love. Our Exhortations produced a very good Effect, and hindred our Men from deſerting, as they deſigned.

We ſounded in the mean time, the Mouth of the River, and having found a Sand on which our Ship might ſtrike, we fix'd two great poſts therein, to which we faſtned Bears-Skins as ſo many Buoys to direct the Courſe of our Ship through the Channel ſhe ought to paſs; and for a greater Precaution, two Men were ſent back to *Miſſilimakinak*, to wait there till the return of our Ship, and ſerve as Pilots.

The 20th of *November* M. *Tonti* arrived with two Canou's laden with Stags and Deers, which was a welcome Refreſhment to our Men, but he did not bring above half of our Men with him, the reſt being left on the other ſide of the Lake, within three Days Journey from our Fort. M. *la Salle* was very angry with him upon that Account, being afraid that they would run away.

They told us that our Ship had not put into the Bay of *Miſſilimakinak*, as they were order'd, and that they had heard nothing of her ſince we ſailed, notwithſtanding they had enquir'd as much as they could, from the Savages inhabiting the Coaſt of the Lake. This confirmed the Suſpicion, or rather the Belief we had that ſhe was caſt away: However, M. *la Salle* continued the Building of his Fort, which was at laſt perfected, and called *Fort Miamis*.

The Winter drawing ſo nigh, and M. *la Salle* being afraid that the Ice would ſtop his Voyage, ſent back M. *Tonti* to fetch the Men he had left, and command them to come to him immediately; but meeting with a violent Storm, their Canou was driven againſt the Coaſt, and broke in pieces, whereby they loſt their Guns and Equipage, and were obliged to return over-land. Few Days after, all our Men arrived except two, who deſerted; ſo that we prepared our ſelves to continue our Voyage, the Rains that fell about that time having melted the Ice, and made the Rivers Navigable.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A Continuation of our Voyage from Fort Miamis *to the River of the* Illinois.

WE embarked on the *Third* of *December*, being Three and Thirty Men in Eight Canou's, and having left the Lake of the *Illinois*, went up the River *Miamis*, which we had ſounded before.

We

We made about five and twenty Leagues to the South-Weſt, but could not diſcover the Place where we were to Land, and carry our Canou's and Equipage into the River of the *Illinois*, which falls into that of *Meſchaſipi*; that is, in the Language of the *Illinois*, the *Great River*. We had already paſs'd the place of the *Portage*, but not knowing whereabouts we were, we thought fit to ſtay there, to expect M. *la Salle*, who was landed to view the Country: We ſtaid a great while, and ſeeing he did not come, I went very far into the Woods with two of our Men who fired their Guns to give him notice of the place where we were; and in the mean time two others went up the River in their Canou, in order to find him out; but all our Endeavours were in vain, ſo that we returned towards Evening.

The next Day I went up the River my ſelf, but hearing nothing of him, I came back, and found our Men very much perplexed, fearing he was loſt; but about four a Clock in the Afternoon he returned to us, having his Face and Hands as black as Pitch. He brought along with him two Beaſts as big as Musk'd Rats, whoſe Skins were very fine, and like Ermins. He had killed them with a Stick, as they hung by their Tails to the Boughs of Trees.

He told us, that the Marſhes he had met with in his way, had obliged him to fetch a great compaſs; and that being much annoy'd by the Snow which fell very thick, it was paſt Midnight before he could arrive upon the Banks of the River; where he fir'd his Gun twice, and that hearing no Anſwer, he concluded we were gone up higher, and had therefore march'd that way. He added, that after three Hours March, he ſaw a Fire upon a little Hill, whither he went directly, and hailed us ſeveral times, but hearing no Anſwer, he approached and found no Body near the Fire, but only ſome dry Herbs, upon which a Man was a little while afore laid, as he conjectured, becauſe they were ſtill warm. He

ſup-

ſuppos'd that is was a Savage, who lay thereabouts in an Ambuſcade, and therefore call'd to him in two or three Languages; but no Body anſwering, he cry'd as loud as he could, that to ſhew he was not afraid of him, he was going to lie in his room. However, for fear of any Surprize, he cut ſeveral Boughs and Buſhes, to embarraſs the way, and ſat down by the Fire, which had made his Hands and Face black, as I have obſerv'd. Having thus warm'd and reſted himſelf, he lay down upon the dry Herbs the Savage had gather'd under a Tree, and ſlept very well, notwithſtanding the Froſt and Snow. Father *Gabriel* and I deſir'd him to remain with his Men, and not expoſe himſelf for the future, becauſe the Succeſs of our Enterprize depended only upon him, and he promis'd us to follow our Advice.

Our Savage, who remain'd behind for hunting, finding none of us at the Place of the *Portage*, came up higher to the River, and told us, we had miſt it; therefore he was ſent back with all our Canou's, except one which I kept; for M. *la Salle* was ſo weary, that he was oblig'd to lie there that Night. I made a little Cabin with Mats of Mariſh Ruſhes, wherein we lay together, but were in great danger of being burnt, for it took fire by an unhappy Accident, while we were faſt a ſleep. The next Morning we join'd our Men at the Place of *Portage*, where Father *Gabriel* had made the Day before ſeveral Croſſes upon the Trees, that we might not miſs it another time. We found there a great quantity of Horns and Bones of wild Bulls, as alſo ſome Canou's the Savages had made with the Skins of Beaſts, to croſs the River with their Proviſions. This *Portage* lies at the farther end of a large Champion piece of Ground; and at the other End, to the Weſt, lies a Village of the Savages *Miami's*, *Maſcouteins*, and *Oiatinon*, who live together. The River of the *Illinois* has its Source near that Village, and ſprings out of ſome mariſhy Lands, which are as ſo many Quagmires,

mires, that one can ſcarcely walk over them. The Head of the River is only a League and half from that of *Miamis*, and ſo our *Portage* was not long. We mark'd the way from Place to Place with ſome Trees for the convenience of thoſe we expected after us; and left at the *Portage*, as well as Fort *Miamis*, Letters hanging down from the Trees, containing M. *de la Salle*'s Inſtructions to our Pilot, and the other 25 Men, who were to come with him.

CHAP. XXIX.

An Account of our Embarkment at the Head of the River of the Illinois.

THis River is navigable within a hundred Paces from its Source; I mean for Canou's of Bark of Trees, and not for others; but it increaſes ſo much a little way from thence, that it is as deep and broad as the *Meuſe* and the *Sambre* joyn'd together. It runs through vaſt Marſhes, and though it be rapid enough, is makes ſo many Turnings and Windings, that after a whole Day's Journey, we found we were hardly two Leagues from the Place we left in the Morning. That Country is nothing but Marſhes full of Alder-Trees and Ruſhes; and we could have hardly found for forty Leagues together, any Place to plant our Cabins, had it not been for the Froſt, which made the Earth more firm and ſolid.

Having paſt through great Marſhes, we found a vaſt Plain, on which nothing grows but only ſome Herbs, which were dry at that time, and burnt, becauſe the *Miami's* ſet them one fire every Year, in their hunting wild Bulls, as I ſhall mention anon. We found no manner of Game, which was a great Diſappointment to us, our Proviſions begining to fail. Our Men travell'd about ſixty Miles, without killing any thing elſe but a lean Stag, a ſmall wild Goat,

Goat, ſome few Swans, and two Buſtards, which was no ſufficient Mentainence for two and thirty Men. Moſt of them were ſo weary of this laborious Life, that they would have run away, if poſſible, and gone to the Savages, who were not very far from us, as we judg'd by the great Fires we ſaw in the Plain. There muſt be an innumerable quantity of wild Bulls in that Country, ſince the Earth is cover'd with their Horns. The *Miami's* hunt them towards the latter end of *Autumn*.

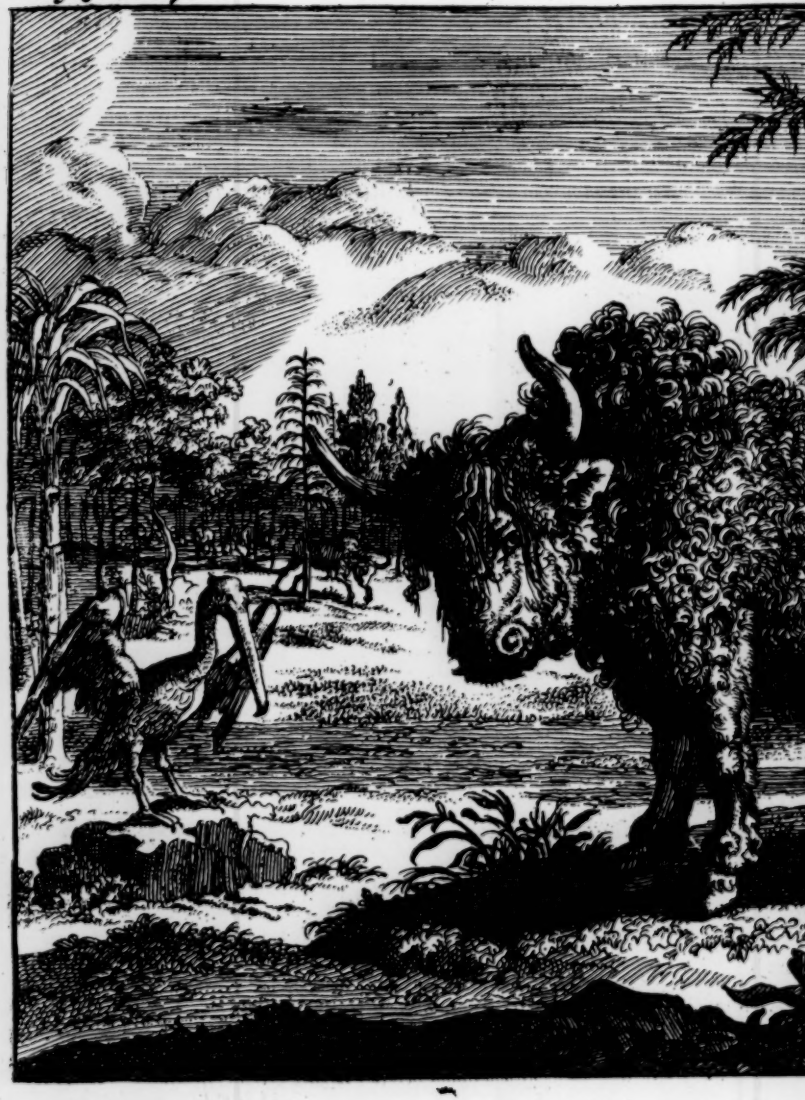
We continu'd our Courſe upon this River very near the whole Month of *December*; but toward the latter end of the ſaid Month, 1679. we arriv'd at the Village of the *Illinois*, which lies near one hundred and thirty Leagues from Fort *Miamis*, on the Lake of the *Illinois*. We ſuffer'd very much in this Paſſage; for the Savages having ſet the Herbs of the Plain on fire, the wild Bulls were fled away, and ſo we could kill but one, and ſome Turkey-Cocks. God's Providence ſupported us all the while; and when we thought that the Extremities we were reduc'd to, were paſt all hopes of Remedy, we found a prodigious big wild Bull, lying faſt in the Mud of the River. We kill'd him and had much ado to get him out of the Mud. This was a great Refreſhment to our Men, and reviv'd their Courage; for being ſo timely unexpectedly reliev'd. they concluded that God approv'd our Deſign.

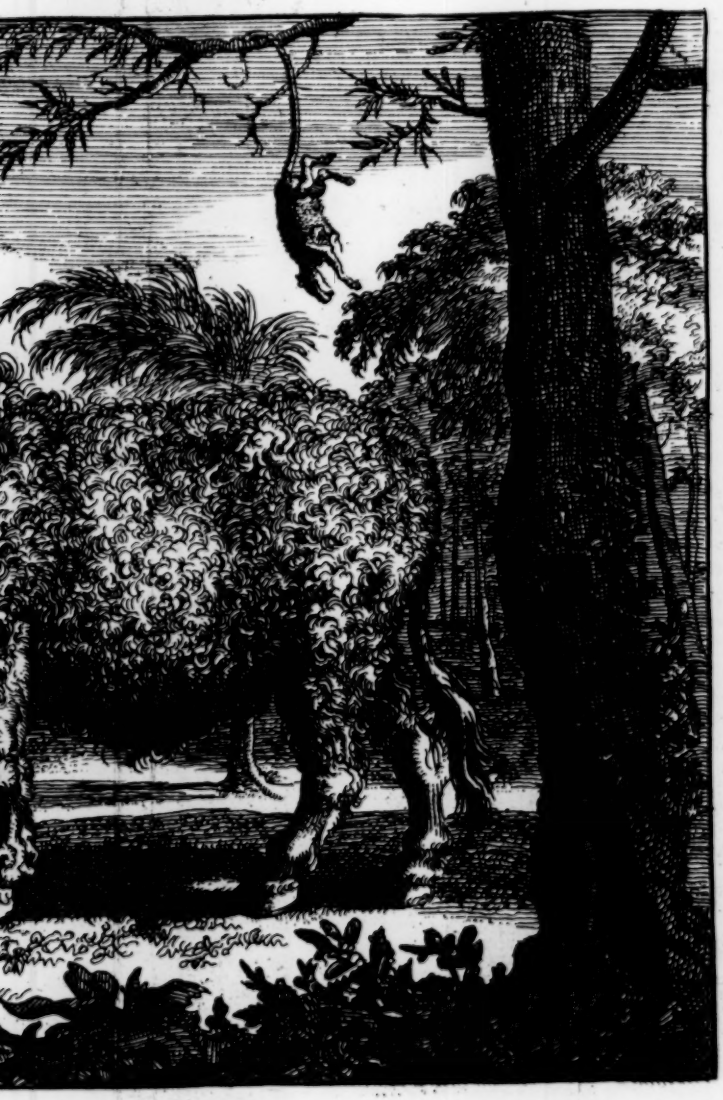
CHAP. XXX.

A Deſcription of the Hunting of the wild Bulls and Cows by the Savages; Of the bigneſs of thoſe Beaſts; and of the Advantages and Improvements that may be made of the Plain where they Paſture; and of the Woods thereabouts.

WHen the Savages diſcover a great Number of thoſe Beaſts together, they likewiſe aſſem-

ble





ble their whole Tribe to encompaſs the Bulls, and then ſet on fire the dry Herbs about them, except in ſome places, which they leave free; and therein lay themſelves in Ambuſcade. The Bulls ſeeing the Flame round about them, run away through thoſe Paſſages where they ſee no Fire; and there fall into the Hands of the Savages, who by theſe means will kill ſometimes above ſixſcore in a day. They divide theſe Beaſts according to the number of each Family; and ſend their Wives to flay them, and bring the Fleſh to their Cabins. Theſe Women are ſo luſty and ſtrong, that they carry on their Back two or three hundred weight, beſides their Children; and notwithſtanding that Burthen, they run as ſwiftly as any of our Soldiers with their Arms.

Thoſe Bulls have a very fine Coat, more like Wooll than Hair, and their Cows have it longer than the Males; their Horns are almoſt black, and much thicker, though ſomewhat ſhorter than thoſe of *Europe*: Their Head is of a prodigious Bigneſs, as well as their Neck very thick, but at the ſame time exceeding ſhort: They have a kind of Bump between the two ſhoulders: Their Legs are big and ſhort, cover'd with long Wooll; and they have between the two Horns an ugly Buſh of Hair, which falls upon their Eyes, and makes them look horrid.

The Fleſh of theſe Beaſts is very reliſhing, and full of Juice, eſpecially in *Autumn*; for having grazed all the Summer long in thoſe vaſt Meadows, where the Herbs are as high as they, they are then very fat. There is alſo among them abundance of Stags, Deers, and wild Goats; and that nothing might be wanting in that Country, for the Convenience of thoſe Creatures, there are Foreſts at certain diſtances, where they retire to reſt, and ſhelter themſelves againſt the violence of the Sun.

They change their Country according to the Seaſons of the Year; for upon the approach of the Winter, they leave the North to go to the Southern Parts.

They

They follow one another, ſo that you may ſee a Drove of them for above a League together, and ſtop all at the ſame place; and the Ground where they uſe to lie is covered with wild Purſlain, which makes me believe, that the Cows Dung is very fit to produce that Herb. Their Ways are as beaten as our great Roads, and no Herb grows therein. They ſwim over the Rivers they meet in their Way, to go and graze in other Meadows. But the care of the Cows for their Young Ones, cannot be too much admir'd; for there being in theſe Meadows a great quantity of Wolves, who might ſurprize them, they go to Calve in the Iſlands of the Rivers, from whence they don't ſtir till the Young Calves are able to follow them; for then they can protect them againſt any Beaſt whatſoever.

Theſe Bulls being very convenient for the Subſiſtence of the Savages, they take care not to ſcare them from their Country; and they purſue only thoſe whom they have wounded with their Arrows: But theſe Creatures multiply in ſuch a manner, that notwithſtanding the great Numbers they kill every Year, they are as numerous as ever.

The Women ſpin the Wooll of theſe Bulls, and make Sacks thereof to carry their Fleſh in, which they dry in the Sun, or broil upon Gridirons. They have no Salt, and yet they prepare their Fleſh ſo well, that it keeps above four Months without breeding any Corruption; and it looks then ſo freſh, that one would think it was newly killed. They commonly boil it, and drink the Broth of it inſtead of Water. This is the ordinary Drink of all the Savages of *America*, who have no Commerce with the *Europeans*. We follow'd their Example in this particular; and it muſt be confeſt that that Broth is very wholſom.

The Skin of one of thoſe Bulls uſually weighs about ſixſcore Pound; but the Savages make uſe only of the thinneſt part, as that of the Belly, which they dreſs with the Brains of all ſorts of Beaſts and thereby

by make it as ſoft as our *Shamoi's* Skins. They paint them with ſeveral Colours, and adorn with pieces of Porcupine-Skins, red and white, the Gowns they make thereof, to appear ſplendidly at Feaſts, and on other ſolemn Occaſions. They make other Gowns againſt cold Weather, wherewith they cover themſelves during the Winter; but theſe plain Gowns, covered with curled Wooll, are, in my Opinion, the fineſt as well as the beſt.

When they kill any Cows, their young Calves follow them, and lick their Heads. They bring them to their Children, who eat them, after having for ſome time play'd with them. They keep the Hoofs of thoſe little Creatures, and when they are very dry, they tie them to ſome Wand, and move them according to the various Poſtures of thoſe who ſing and dance. This is the moſt rediculous Muſical Inſtrument that ever I met with.

Theſe young Calves might eaſily be tamed, and made uſe of to plow the Land, which would be very advantagious to the Savages. Theſe Bulls find in all Seaſons Forrage to Subſiſt by; for if they are ſurprized in the Northern Countries by the Snow, before they can reach the Southren Parts, they have the dexterity to remove the Snow, and eat the Graſs under it. They bellow like our *European* Bulls, but not ſo frequently.

Though theſe Bulls are taller, and bigger than thoſe of *Europe*, they are however ſo ſwift that no Savage can overtake them; They are ſo timorous, that they run away from any Man, except when they are wounded; for then they are dangerous, and often kill the Savage who purſues them. 'Tis a diverting Proſpect to ſee near the Banks of the Rivers, ſeveral Droves of thoſe Bulls of about four or five hundred together, grazing in thoſe green Meadows.

There are ſeveral other Beaſts in that Country, as I obſerved in my Account of *Louiſiana*, as Stags, wild Goats, Beavers, and Otters; there are alſo Buſtards, which

which have an Excellent Taſte; Swans, Tortoiſes, Turkey-Cocks, Parrots, and Partridges. There are alſo an incredible quantity of Pelicans, whoſe Bills are of a prodigious Size; and a great many other ſorts of Birds, and other Beaſts.

The Rivers are plentifully ſtock'd with Fiſh, and the Soil is very fertile. The Foreſts afford all manner of Timber fit for Building, and eſpecially Oak; which is there much better than in *Canada*, and would be excellent for Building Ships. That Timber might be ſquar'd, ſaw'd, and ready prepar'd upon the Spot, and brought over into *Europe*; which would be very convenient, and give time to the Trees of our Foreſts to grow, whereas they are in a manner exhauſted.

There are in thoſe Foreſts abundance of Trees bearing good Fruit, and of wild Vines, which produce Bunches of Grapes a foot and a half long, and of which, when Ripe, may be made very good Wine. One may ſee there alſo large Countries cover'd with good Hemp, growing naturally ſix or ſeven foot in height. In ſhort, by the Experiments I made among the *Iſlati*, and the *Illinois*, I am perſuaded that the Soil of that Country would produce all manner of Corn, Fruits, *&c.* even more plentifully than in any part of *Europe*, ſeeing there are two Crops every Year.

The Air is very temperate, clear, and open, and the Country water'd with ſeveral Lakes, Brooks, and Rivers, which are for the moſt part navigable. The Gnats and other little Flies that are ſo troubleſome in *Canada*, and ſome other dangerous Beaſts, are unknown in this Country; which in two Years time might ſupply its Inhabitants, if cultivated, with all things neceſſary for Life, without wanting any thing from *Europe*; and the Iſlands of *America*, with Wine, Bread, and Fleſh. The *Bucaniers* might kill in that Country a greater number of Bulls than in all the Iſlands they reſort to. There are Mines of Coal,

Coal, Slate, and Iron; and ſeveral Pieces of fine red Copper, which I have found now and then upon the Surface of the Earth, makes me believe that there are Mines of it; and doubtleſs of other Metals and Minerals, which may be diſcover'd one time or another. They have already found Allom in the Country of the *Iroqueſe*.

CHAP. XXXI.

An Account of our Arrival to the Country of the Illinois, *one of the moſt numerous Nations of the Savages of* America.

THis Word *Illinois*, comes, as it has been already obſerv'd, from *Illini*, which in the Language of that Nation ſignifies *A perfect and accompliſh'd Man.* The Villages of the *Illinois* are ſituated in a Marſhy Plain, about the Fortieth Degree of Latitude, on the Right ſide of the River, which is as broad as the *Meuſe*. Their greateſt Village may have in it Foure or five hundred Cabins, every Cabin five or ſix Fires, and each Fire one or two Families, who live together in great Concord. Their Cabins are cover'd with Mats of flat Ruſhes, ſo cloſely ſow'd together, that no Wind, Rain, or Snow can go thro' 'em. The Union that reigns amongſt that Barbarous People, ought to cover with Shame the Chriſtians; amongſt whom we can ſee no Trace of that brotherly Love, which united the Primitive Profeſſors of Chriſtianity.

When the Savages have gather'd in their *Indian* Corn, they dig ſome Holes in the Ground, where they keep it for Summer-time, becauſe Meat does not keep in hot Weather; whereas they have very little occaſion for it in Winter; and 'tis then their Cuſtom to leave their Villages, and with their whole Families to go a hunting wild Bulls, Beavers, *&c.* carrying with them but a ſmall quantity of their Corn, which

however they value ſo much, that the moſt ſenſible Wrong one can do them, in their Opinion, is to take ſome of their Corn in their abſence. We found no Body in the Village, as we had foreſeen; for the *Illinois* had divided themſelves, according to their Cuſtom, and were gone a hunting. Their Abſence caus'd a great Perplexity amongſt us; for we wanted Proviſions, and yet durſt not meddle with the *Indian* Corn the Savages had laid under Ground, for their Subſiſtence, and to ſow their Lands with. However, our Neceſſity being very great, and it being impoſſible to continue our Voyage without any Proviſions, eſpecially ſeeing the Bulls and other Beaſts had been driven from the Banks of the River, by means of Fire, as I have related in my former Chapter, M. *la Salle* reſolv'd to take about forty Buſhels of Corn, in hopes to appeaſe the Savages with ſome Preſents.

We embark'd again with theſe freſh Proviſions, and continu'd to fall down the River, which runs directly to the South. Four Days after, being the Firſt of *January*, 1680. we ſaid Maſs; and having wiſh'd a happy New-year to M. *la Salle*, and to all others, I thought fit to make a pathetical Exhortation to our Grumblers, to encourage them to go on chearfully, and inſpire them with Union and Concord. Father *Gabriel*, *Zenobe*, and I, embrac'd them afterwards; and they promis'd us to continue firm in their Duty. The ſame Day we went thro' a Lake form'd by the River, about ſeven Leagues long, and one broad. The Savages call that Place *Pimiteoui*; that is, in their Tongue, *A Place where there is abundance of fat Beaſts.* When the River of the *Illinois* freezes, which is but ſeldom, it freezes only to this Lake, and never from thence to the *Meſchaſipi*, into which this River falls. M. *la Salle* obſerv'd here the Elevation of the Pole, and found that this Lake lies in the Latitude of 33. Degrees and 45. Minutes.

We had been inform'd that the *Illinois* were our Enemies;

Enemies; and therefore M. *la Salle* had reſolv'd to uſe all manner of Precaution when we ſhould meet with them; but we found our ſelves on a ſudden in the middle of their Camp, which took up both ſides of the River. M. *la Salle* order'd immediately his Men to make their Arms ready, and brought his Canou's into a Line, placing himſelf to the Right, and M. *Tonti* to the Left; ſo that we took almoſt the whole breadth of the River. The *Illinois*, who had not yet diſcover'd our Fleet, were very much ſurpriz'd to ſee us comeing ſo ſwiftly upon them; for the Stream was extraordinary rapid in that Place: Some run to their Arms; but moſt took their Flight with horrid Cries and Howlings.

The Current brought us in the mean time to their Camp; and M. *la Salle* went the very firſt a-ſhore, followed by his Men; which encreas'd the Conſternation of the Savages, whom we might have eaſily defeated; but as it was not our Deſign, we made a Halt to give them time to recover themſelves, and ſee that we were no Enemies. M. *la Salle* might have prevented their Confuſion, by ſhewing his *Calumet* or Pipe of Peace; but he was afraid the Savages wou'd impute it to our Weakneſs.

The *Illinois* being exceedingly terrify'd, tho' they were ſeveral thouſand Men, tender'd us the *Calumet* of Peace; and then we offer'd them ours; which being accepted on both ſides, an extraordinary Joy ſucceeded the terrible Fears they had been under upon our landing. They ſent immediately to fetch back thoſe who fled away; and Father *Zenobe* and I went to their Cabins. We took their Children by the Hand, and expreſs'd our Love for them with all the Signs we cou'd: We did the like to the Old Men, having Compaſſion of thoſe poor Creatures, who are ſo miſerable as to be ignorant of their Creator and Redeemer.

Moſt of the Savages, who had run away upon our landing, underſtanding that we were Friends, re-

turn'd; but ſome others had been ſo terrifi'd, that they did not come back till three or four Days after that they were told that we had ſmoak'd in their *Calumet* of Peace. In the mean time we had diſcours'd the Chief of the *Illinois* by our Interpreter, and told them that we were Inhabitants of *Canada*, and their Friends; that we were come to teach them the Knowledge of the Captain of Heaven and Earth, and the uſe of Fire-arms, which were unknown to them; with ſeveral other things relating to their advantage. We were forced to make uſe of theſe metaphorical Expreſſions, to give them ſome *Idea* of the Supream D E I T Y. They heard our Diſcourſes with great attention, and afterwards gave a great Shout for Joy, repeating theſe Words: *Tepatoui-Nika*; That is, *Well, my Brother, my Friend; thou haſt done very well.* Theſe Savages have more Humanity than all the others of the Northern *America*; and underſtanding the Subject of our Errand, expreſs'd great Gratitude thereupon. They rubb'd our Legs and Feet near the Fire, with Oil of Bears and Wild Bulls Fat, which, after much Travel, is an incomparable Refreſhment; and preſented us ſome Fleſh to eat, putting the three firſt Morſels into our Mouth with great Ceremonies. This is a great piece of Civility amongſt them.

M. *la Salle* preſented them with ſome Tobacco from *Martinico*, and ſome Axes; and told them, that he had deſired them to meet to treat about ſome weighty Matters; but that there was one in particular, which he would diſcourſe them upon before any other. He added, that he knew how neceſſary their Corn was to them; but that being reduced to an unſpeakable Neceſſity when he came to their Village, and ſeeing no probability to ſubſiſt, he had been forced to take ſome Corn from their Habitations without their leave: That he would give 'em Axes, and other things, in lieu of it, if they could ſpare it;

that

that if they could not, they were free to take it again; concluding, that if they were not able to ſupply us with Proviſions, he deſigned to continue his Voyage, and go to their Neighbours, who would heartily give him what was neceſſary for his Subſiſtence; but however, to ſhew them his Kindneſs, he would leave a Smith among them, to mend their Axes and other Tools we ſhould ſupply them with. The Savages having conſidered our Propoſals, granted all our Demands, and made Alliance with us.

We were obliged to uſe many Precautions to make our Alliance laſting and ſolid, becauſe our Enemies did their utmoſt to prevent it. The very ſame Day we came to the Camp of the *Illinois*, one of the Chief Captains of the *Maſcoutens*, whoſe Name was *Monſo*, arrived alſo with ſome *Miami's*, and other young Men, who brought with them ſome Axes, Knives, Kettles, and other Goods. Our Enemies had choſen him for that Embaſſie, knowing that the *Illinois* would rather believe him than the *Miami's*, becauſe they had never been in War with the *Maſcoutens*. This Savage arrived pretty late, and caball'd all the Night long againſt us: He told them, That M. *la Salle* was a great Friend of the *Iroqueſe*, who were to follow him ſpeedily with ſome of the *Europeans* from *Canada*, to invade them, and deſtroy their Nation; and that he was ſent by ſome of the *Europeans* themſelves, who could not approve that Treachery of their Country-men, to give them notice thereof, that they might not be ſurpriz'd. He enforc'd his Arguments, by preſenting them with all the Goods he had brought along with him; and thinking he had gain'd his Point, went back the ſame Night, fearing, with much Reaſon, that M. *la Salle* would reſent that Maſter-piece of Villany, and puniſh him for it. The *Illinois* were aſſembled in Council all the Night, (for they never Treat of any ſecret Affairs during the Day) and did not know what Meaſures to

take; for tho' they did not believe all the Stories the *Maſcouten* had made unto them, yet the next Day they appeared very indifferent, and miſtruſtful of us. As they ſeemed to contrive ſomething againſt us, we began to be be uneaſie; but M. *la Salle*, who ſuſpected that their ſudden alteration towards us was the Effect of a falſe Report, made ſuch preſents to one of their Chiefs, that he told him all the Particulars of the Embaſſie and Negotiation of *Monſo*; and thereby enabled him to remove the Jealouſie of the *Illinois*, and confound the wicked Deſigns of our Enemies.

He managed that point with ſuch Dexterity, that he did not only regain the Friendſhip of that Nation, but likewiſe undeceived the *Maſcouten* and *Miami's*; and was Mediator between the latter and the *Illinois*, who by his means made an Alliance, which laſted all the while we remained in thoſe Countries.

CHAP. XXXII.

An Account of what happened to us while we remained among the Illinois, *till the building of a New Fort.*

SOme Days after, *Nikanape*, Brother to *Cheſſagouaſſe*, the moſt conſiderable Chief of the *Illinois*, who was then abſent, invited us to a great Feaſt; and before we ſate down to eat, made a long Speech, very different from what the other Captains had told us upon our arrival. He ſaid that he had invited us not ſo much to give us a Treat, as to endeavour to diſſwade us from the Reſolution we had taken to go down to the Sea by the great River *Meſchaſipi*. He added, That ſeveral had periſh'd, having ventured upon the ſame Enterprize, the Banks of that River being inhabited by barbarous and Bloody Nations, whom we ſhould be unable to reſiſt, notwithſtanding our Valour and the Goodneſs of our Arms; That that River was full of dangerous Monſters, as Crocodiles,

Tritons,

Tritons, (meaning a Sea-monſter) and Serpents; that ſuppoſing the Barque we deſign'd to build was big enough to protect us againſt the dangers he had mention'd, yet it would avail us nothing againſt another which was inevitable, *For*, ſaid he, *the River* Meſchaſipi *is ſo full of Rocks and Falls towards its Mouth, that the Rapidity of the Current cannot be maſtered, which will carry your Barque into a horrid Whirlpool, that ſwallows up every thing that comes near it; and even the River it ſelf, which appears no more, loſing it ſelf in that hideous and bottomleſs Gulph.*

He added ſo many other Circumſtances, and appear'd ſo ſerious, and ſo much concerned for us, that two of our Men who underſtood their Language, but not their Politicks, were moved at it, and their Fear appeared in their Faces. We obſerved it, but could not help it; for it would be an unpardonable Affront to interrupt a Savage; and beſides, we had perhaps encreas'd the Alarms of our Men. When *Nikanape* had made an end of his Diſcourſe, we anſwered him in ſo calm a manner, that he could not fancy we were ſurprized at his Objections againſt our Voyage.

Our Interpreter told him, by order of M. *la Salle*, that we were much obliged to him for the Advices he gave us; but that the Difficulties and Dangers he had mentioned, would make our Enterprize ſtill more glorious; that we fear'd the Maſter of the Life of all Men, who rul'd the Sea, and all the World; and therefore would think it Happineſs to lay down our Lives to make his Name known to all his Creatures. We added, that we believ'd that moſt of the Dangers he had mention'd were not in being, but that the Friendſhip he had for us, had put him upon that Invention, to oblige us to remain with them. We thought fit, however, to let him know, that we perceiv'd our Enemies had fomented ſome Jealouſies in their Mind, and that they ſeem'd to miſtruſt our Deſigns; but as we were ſincere in our Dealings, we

deſired them to let us know freely, and without any Diſguiſe, the Grounds of their Suſpicions, that we might ſatisfie them, and clear our ſelves; concluding, that ſeeing our Demand was ſo juſt and equitable, we expected they would grant it, or elſe that we ſhould have reaſon to think that the Joy they had expreſs'd upon our Arrival, and the Friendſhip they had ſince ſhew'd to us, was nothing but a Deceit and Diſſimulation. *Nikanape* was not able to anſwer us, and therefore chang'd his Diſcourſe, deſiring us to eat.

The Dinner being over, our Interpreter reaſſum'd his Diſcourſe, and told the Company, that we were not ſurpriz'd at the Envy their Neighbours expreſs'd about our Arrival into their Country, becauſe they knew too well the Advantages of Commerce, and therefore would ingroſs it to themſelves, and obſtruct by all means our good Correſpondence; but that we wonder'd that they would give Ear to the Suggeſtions of our Common Enemies, and conceal any thing from us, ſince we had ſo ſincerely acquainted them with our Deſigns.

We did not ſleep, Brother, ſaid he, directing his Diſcourſe to *Nicanape*, *when* Monſo *was caballing amongſt you in the Night to our Prejudice, endeavouring to make you believe that we were Spies of the* Iroqueſe. *The Preſents he made to enforce his Lies, are ſtill hidden in this Cabin. But why has he run away immediately after, inſtead of appearing publickly to juſtifie his Accuſation? Thou art a Witneſs thy ſelf, that upon our landing we might have kill'd all thy Nephews, and done what our Enemies tell you we deſign to do, after we have made Alliance with thee, and ſettled our ſelves amongſt you. But if it were our Deſign, why ſhould we defer to put it into execution? And who hinders our Warriours, who are here with me, to kill all of you whilſt your young Men are a Hunting? Thou haſt been told, that our Valour is terrible to the* Iroqueſe *themſelves; and therefore we need not their Aſſiſtance to wage War with thee, If it were our Deſign.*

But

But to remove even the leaſt Pretence of ſuſpicion and Jealouſie, ſend ſomebody to bring back that malicious Accuſer, and we will ſtay here to confute him in thy Preſence: For how can he know us, ſeeing he never ſaw us in his Life? And how can he be acquainted with the ſecret League we have made with the Iroqueſe, *whom he knows only by Name? Conſider our Equipage; We have nothing but Tools and Goods, which can never be made uſe of, but for the Good of thy Nation, and not for its Deſtruction, as our Enemies would make thee believe.*

This Diſcourſe mov'd them very much; and they ſent after *Monſo* to bring him back; but the Snow which fell that Night ſpoil'd the Tract, and ſo he could not be overtaken. He had remained for ſome Days not far from us, to know what would be the ſucceſs of his Embaſſie. However, ſome of our Men lay under ſuch terrible Apprehenſions, that we could never recover their Courage, nor remove their Fears; ſo that ſix of them who had the Guard that Night (among which were two Sawyers, the moſt neceſſary of our Workmen for building our Ship) run away, taking with them what they thought neceſſary; but conſidering the Country through which they were to Travel, and the Seaſon of the year, we may ſay, that for avoiding an uncertain Peril, they expos'd themſelves to a moſt certain Danger.

M. *la Salle* ſeeing that thoſe ſix Men were gone, and fearing that this Deſertion would make a diſadvantagious Impreſſion upon the Savages, he order'd his Men to tell the *Illinois*, that he had reſolv'd to ſend after them to puniſh them as they deſerved; but that the Seaſon being ſo hard, he was loath to expoſe his Men; and that thoſe Deſerters would be ſeverely puniſhed in *Canada*. In the mean time we exhorted the reſt to continue firm in their Duty, aſſuring them, That if any were afraid of venturing themſelves upon the River of *Meſchaſipi*, becauſe of the Dangers *Nikanape* had mention'd, M. *la Salle* would give them leave to return next Spring to *Canada*, and allow

allow them a Canou to make their Voyage; whereas they could not venture to return home at this time of the Year, without expoſing themſelves to periſh with Hunger, Cold, or the Hands of the Savages.

They promis'd Wonders; but M. *la Salle* knowing their Inconſtancy, and diſſembling the Vexation their want of Courage and Reſolution caus'd him, reſolv'd to prevent any farther Subornation, and to leave the Camp of the *Illinois*; but leſt his Men ſhould not conſent to it, he call'd them together and told them we were not ſafe among the *Illinois*, and that perhaps the *Iroqueſe* would come in a little time to attack them; and that theſe being not able to reſiſt, they were like to run away, and betake themſelves to the Woods, and leave us expos'd to the Mercy of the *Iroqueſe*, whoſe Cruelty was ſufficiently known to us; therefore he knew no other Remedy but to fortifie a Poſt, where we might defend our ſelves both againſt the *Illinois* and *Iroqueſe*, as occaſion ſhould require. Theſe Reaſons, with ſome other Arguments which I added to the ſame purpoſe, proved powerful enough to engage them to approve M. *la Salle*'s Deſign; and ſo it was reſolved to build a Fort in a very advantageous Place on the River, four Day's Journey below the great Village of the *Illinois*.

CHAP. XXXIII.

Reflections upon the Temper and Manners of the Illinois, *and the little Diſpoſition they have to embrace Chriſtianity.*

BEfore I ſpeak in particular of the *Illinois*, I think to obſerve here, that there is a Nation of the *Miami's*, who inhabit the Banks of a fine River, within fifteen Leagues from the Lake, in the Latitude of 41 Degrees. The *Maskoutens* and *Outtouagami's* live more Northward on the River *Melliokì*, which runs into

into the Lake in the Latitude of 43 Degrees. To the Weſt of it live the *Kikapous* and *Ainoves*, who have two Villages; and to the Weſt of theſe there is the Village of the *Illinois Caſcaſchia*, ſituated towards the Source of the River *Checagoumenans*. The *Authoutantas* and *Maskoutens-Nadoueſſians* live within one hundred and thirty Leagues of the *Illinois*, in three great Villages, on the Banks of a fine River which diſcharges it ſelf into the great River *Meſchaſipi*. We ſhall have occaſion to talk of theſe and ſeveral other Nations.

Moſt of theſe Savages, and eſpecially the *Illinois*, make their Cabins of flat Ruſhes, which they ſow together, and line them with the ſame; ſo that no Rain can go through it. They are tall, ſtrong, and manage their Bows and Arrows with great dexterity; for they did not know the uſe of Fire-Arms before we came into their Country. They are Lazy, Vagabonds, Timerous, Pettiſh, Thieves, and ſo fond of their Liberty, that they have no great Reſpect for their Chiefs.

Their Villages are open, and not enclos'd with Palliſado's, as in ſome other Places, becauſe they have not Courage enough to defend them, for they fly away as ſoon as they hear their Enemies approach. Beſides their Arrows, they uſe two other Weapons, a kind of a Pike, and a Club of Wood. Their Country is ſo fertile, that it ſupplies them with all Neceſſaries for Life, and eſpecially ſince we taught them the uſe of Iron Tools to cultivate it.

Hermaphrodites are very common amongſt them, which is ſo much the more ſurprizing, becauſe I have not obſerved any ſuch thing amongſt the other Nations of the Northern *America*. Poligamy is allowed among them; and they generally marry ſeveral Siſters, thinking they agree better than Strangers. They are exceedingly Jealous, and cut the Noſes of their Wives upon the leaſt ſuſpicion. Not-

with

withſtanding they have ſeveral Wives, they are ſo laſcivious as to be guilty of Sodomy, and keep Boys whom they cloath with Womens Apparel, becauſe they make of them that abominable Uſe. Theſe Boys live in their Families amongſt Women, without going either to their Wars or Hunting. As to their Religion I obſerv'd that they are very ſuperſtitious; but I cou'd never diſcover that they had any Worſhip, nor any Reaſon for their Superſtition. They are great Gameſters, as well as all the other Savages that I have known in *America*.

As there are ſome ſtony Places in this Country, where there is a great quantity of Serpents, very troubleſome to the *Illinois*, they know ſeveral Herbs which are a quicker and ſurer Remedy againſt their Venom, than our Treacle or Orvietan. They rub themſelves with theſe Herbs, after which they play with thoſe dangerous Serpents, without receiving any hurt. They take the young ones and put them ſometimes into their Mouth. They go ſtark naked in Summer-time, wearing only a kind of Shoes made of the Skins of Bulls; but the Winter being pretty ſevere in their Country, tho' very ſhort, they wear Gowns made of the Skins of Wild Beaſts, or of Bulls, which they dreſs and paint moſt Curiouſly, as I have already obſerved.

The *Illinois*, as moſt of the Savages of *America*, being brutiſh, wild, and ſtupid, and their Manners being ſo oppoſite to the Morals of the Goſpel, their Converſion is to be deſpaired of, till Time and Commerce with the *Europeans* has remov'd their natural Fierceneſs and Ignorance, and thereby made 'em more apt to be ſenſible of the Charms of Chriſtianity. I have met with ſome who were more teachable; and Father *Zenobe* told me, that he Baptiz'd two or three of them at the point of Death, becauſe they deſir'd it; and ſhew'd ſome good Diſpoſition to induce him to grant that Demand. They will readily ſuffer us to baptize their Children, and would not refuſe it them-

themſelves; but they are incapable of any previous Inſtruction concerning the truth of the Goſpel, and the Efficacy of the Sacraments. Would I follow the Example of ſome other Miſſionaries, I could have boaſted of many Converſions; for I might have eaſily baptiz'd all thoſe Nations, and then ſay, as I am afraid they do without any ground, That I had converted them.

Father *Zenobe* had met with two Savages, who had promis'd to follow him every where, whom he inſtructed and baptiz'd; but tho' they were more tractable than the reſt, they would not leave their Country; and he underſtood afterwards, that one of them, whoſe Name was *Chaſſagouache*, was dead in the hands of the *Junglers*, and conſequently in the Superſtitions of his Country-Men; ſo that his Baptiſm ſerv'd only to make him *duplo Filius Gehennæ*.

CHAP. XXXIV.

An Account of the Building of a New Fort on the River of the Illinois, *named by the Savages* Checagou, *and by us Fort* Crevecœur; *as alſo a Barque to go down the River* Meſchaſipi.

I Muſt obſerve here, that the hardeſt Winter laſts not above two Months in this Charming Country; ſo that on the 15th of *January* there came a ſudden Thaw, which made the Rivers Navigable, and the Weather ſo mild as it is with us in the middle of the Spring. M. *la Salle* improving this fair Seaſon, deſir'd me to go down the River with him to chooſe a Place fit to build our Fort. After having view'd the Country we pitch'd upon an Eminence on the Bank of the River, defended on that ſide by the River, and on two others by two Ditches the Rains had made very deep by ſucceſſion of Time; ſo that it was acceſſible only by one way; therefore we caſt a Line

to

to joyn thoſe two natural Ditches, and made the Eminence ſteep on every ſide, ſupporting the Earth with great pieces of Timber. We made a haſty Lodgment thereupon, to be ready to defend us in caſe the Savages would obſtruct the building of our Fort; but no body offering to diſturb us, we went on diligently with our work. Fathers *Gabriel*, *Zenobe*, and I, made in the mean time a Cabin of Planks, wherein our Workmen came to Prayers every Morning and Evening; but having no Wine, we could not ſay Maſs. The Fort being half finiſh'd, M. *la Salle* lodg'd himſelf in the middle with M. *Tonti*; and every body took his Poſt. We plac'd our Forge along the Curtain on the ſide of the Wood, and laid in a great quantity of Coals for that uſe.

In the mean time our thoughts were always bent towards our diſcovery, and M. *la Salle* and I had frequent Conferences about it: But our greateſt difficulty was to build a Barque; for our Sawyers being gone, we did not know what to do. However, as the Timber was cheap enough, we told our Men, that if any of them would undertake to ſaw Boards for Building the ſaid Barque, we might ſurmount all other Difficulties. Two Men undertook it; and though they had never try'd it before, they ſucceeded very well, ſo that we began to build a Barque, the Keel whereof was forty two Foot long. Our Men went on ſo briskly with the Work, that on the firſt of *March* our Barque was half built, and all the Timber ready prepar'd for the finiſhing of it. Our Fort was alſo very near finiſh'd; and we nam'd it the Fort of *Crevecœur*, becauſe the deſertion of our Men, and the other Difficulties we labour'd under, had almoſt broke our Hearts.

Tho the Winter is not harder nor longer in the Country of the *Illinois*, than in *Provence*, the Snow remain'd upon the Earth, in the Year 1680, for twenty days together, which had not been ſeen in the Memory of Man. This made the Savages mightily

tily concern'd, and brought upon us a World of Inconveniences, beſides the many others we ſuffer'd. In the mean time we perfected our Fort; and our Barque was in ſuch a forwardneſs, that we might have expected to be in a condition to ſail in a very ſhort time, had we been provided with all other Neceſſaries; but hearing nothing of our Ship, and therefore wanting the Rigging and other Tackle for our Barque, we found our ſelves in great perplexity and did not know what to do in this ſad Juncture, being above five hundred Leagues from Fort *Frontenac*, whither it was almoſt impoſſible to return at that time, becauſe the Snow made the travelling very dangerous by Land, and the Ice made it impracticable to our Canou's.

M. *la Salle* did not doubt then but his belov'd *Griffin* was loſt; but neither this nor the other Difficulties dejected him; his great Courage buoy'd him up and he reſolv'd to return to Fort *Frontenac* by Land, notwithſtanding the Snow, and the unſpeakable Dangers attending ſo great a Voyage. We had a long Conference about it in private, wherein having examin'd all things, it was reſolv'd, that he ſhould return to Fort *Frontenac* with three Men, to bring along with him the neceſſary things to proceed on our Diſcovery, while I with two Men ſhould go in a Canou to the River *Meſchaſipi*, and there endeavour to get the Friendſhip of thoſe Nations inhabiting the Banks of that River. Our Reſolution was certainly very great and bold; but there was this eſſential difference, that the Inhabitants of the Countries through which M. *la Salle* was to travel, knew the *Europeans*; whereas thoſe Savages, whom I deſign'd to viſit, had never heard of us in their Life; and had been repreſented by the *Illinois*, as the moſt barbarous Nations in the World. However, M. *la Salle* and I had Courage enough to undertake our Difficult Task; but we had much ado to perſwade five of our Men to follow us, or to engage to expect our Return at Fort *Crevecœur*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXV.

Containing an Account of what was tranſacted at Fort Crevecœur *before M.* la Salle's *return to Fort* Frontenac; *and the Inſtructions we receiv'd from a Savage concerning the River* Meſchaſipi.

BEfore M. *la Salle* and I parted, we found means to undeceive our Men, and remov'd the groundleſs Fears they had conceiv'd from what the *Illinois*, through the Suggeſtions of *Monſo*, had told us concerning the Dangers, or rather the Impoſſibility of Sailing upon the River *Meſchaſipi*. Some Savages inhabiting beyond that River, came to the Camp of the *Illinois*, and gave us an Account of it, very different from what *Nikanape* had told us, ſome other Savages own'd that it was navigable, and not interrupted by Rocks and Falls, as the *Illinois* would make us believe; aud one of the *Illinois* themſelves, being gain'd by ſome ſmall Preſents, told us in great ſecreſie, that the Acconnt their Chief had given us, was a downright Forgery, contriv'd on purpoſe to oblige us to give over our Enterprize. This reviv'd ſomwhat our Men; but yet they were ſtill wavering and irreſolute; and therefore M. *la Salle* ſaid, that he would fully convince them, that the *Illinois* had reſolv'd in their Council to forge that Account, in order to ſtop our Voyage; and few days after we met with a favourable opportunity for it.

The *Illinois* had made an excurſion South-ward; as they were returning with ſome Priſoners, one of their Warriors came before their Comrades, and viſited us at our Fort; we entertain'd him as well as we could, and ask'd him ſeveral Queſtions touching the River *Meſchaſipi*, from whence he came, and where he had been oftentimes, giving him to underſtand, that ſome other Savage had given us an Account of it. He took a piece of Charcoal, and drew a Map of the Courſe of that River

River, which I found afterwards pretty exact; and told us, that he had been in a *Pyrogue*; that is; a Canou made of the Trunk of a Tree, from the Mouth of this River, very near the Place where the *Meſchaſipi* falls into the great Lake; for ſo they call the Sea. That their was neither Falls, nor rapid Currents, as we had been told; that it was very broad towards the great Lake, and interrupted with Banks of Sand; but that there were large Canals betwixt them, deep enough for any *Pyrogue*. He told us alſo the Name of ſeveral Nations inhabiting the Banks of *Meſchaſipi*, and of ſeveral Rivers that fall into it. I ſet down in my Journal all that he told us, of which I ſhall perhaps give a larger Account in another place. We made him a ſmall Preſent to thank him for his Kindneſs, in diſcovering a Truth which the Chief of his Nation had ſo carefully conceal'd. He deſir'd us to hold our tongue, and never to mention him, which we promis'd; and gave him an Axe, wherewith he ſhut his mouth, according to to the Cuſtom of the Savages, when they recommend a Secret.

The next day, after Prayers, we went to the Village of the *Illinois*; whom we found in the Cabin of one of their Chiefs; who entertain'd them with a Bear, whoſe Fleſh is much valu'd among them. They deſir'd us to ſit down upon a fine Mat of Ruſhes: And ſome time after our Interpreter told them, that we were come to acquaint them, that the Maker of all Things, and the Maſter of the Lives of Men, took a particular Care of us, and had been pleas'd to let us have a true Account of the River *Meſchaſipi*; the Navigation whereof they had repreſented to us as impracticable. We added all the Particulars we had learn'd, but in ſuch Terms, that it was impoſſible they ſhould ſuſpect any of their Men.

The Savages were much ſurpriz'd and did not doubt but we had that Account by ſome extraordinary Way; therefore they ſhut their Mouths with their

Hands; which is their uſual Cuſtom to expreſs their Admiration by. They told us frankly afterwards, that the great deſire they had to ſtop amongſt them our Captain, and the *Grey-Coats* or *Barefeet*, as they call the *Franciſcans*, had oblig'd them to forge the Stories they had told us, and to conceal the Truth; but ſince we had come to the Knowledge of it by another way, they would tell us all that they knew; and confirm'd every Particular their Warriour had told us. This Confeſſion remov'd the Fears of our Men, who were few dayes after ſtill more fully perſwaded that the *Illinois* had only deſign'd to frighten us, from our Diſcovery: For Several Savages of the Nations of *Oſages*, *Cikaga*, and *Akanſa*, came to ſee us, and brought fine Furrs to barter for our Axes They told us that the *Meſchaſipi* was navigable almoſt from its Source to the Sea; and gave us great Encouragement to go on with our Deſign, aſſuring us that all the Nations inhabiting along the River, from the Mouth of that of the *Illinois*, to the Sea, would come to meet us, and dance the *Calumet* of Peace, as they expreſs it, and make an Alliance with us.

The *Miami's* arriv'd much about that time, and danc'd the *Calumet* with the *Illinois*, making an Alliance with them againſt the *Iroqueſe*; their implacable Enemies. We were Witneſſes to their Treaty; and M. *la Salle* made them ſome Preſents, the better to oblige both Parties to the Obſervation of their League.

We were three Miſſionaries for that handful of *Europeans* at Fort *Crevecœur*, and therefore we thought fit to divide our ſelves: Father *Gabriel* being very old, was to continue with our Men; and Father *Zenobe* among the *Illinois*, having deſir'd it himſelf, in hopes to convert that numerous Nation: And I, as I have already related, was to go on with our Diſcovery. Father *Zenobe* liv'd already among the *Illinois*, but the rude Manners of that People made him ſoon weary of it. His Landlord, whoſe Name was *Omahouha*,

houha, that is to ſay *Wolf*, was the Head of a Tribe, and took a ſpecial Care of Father *Zenobe*, eſpecially after M. *la Salle* had made him ſome Preſents: He lov'd him as his Child; but however, I perceiv'd in the Viſits he made us, (for he liv'd but within half a League of our Fort) that he was not ſatisfi'd to live amongſt that brutiſh Nation, though he had already learn'd their Tongue. This oblig'd me to offer him to take his place, provided he would ſupply mine, and go on with our Diſcovery amongſt ſeveral Nations, whoſe Language we did not underſtand, and who had never heard of us; but Father *Zenobe* foreſeeing the Danger and Fatigue I was like to be expos'd to, choſe to remain with the *Illinois*, whoſe Temper he knew, and with whome he was able to converſe.

M. *la Salle* left M. *Tonti* to command in Fort *Crevecœur*, and order'd our Carpenter to prepare ſome thick Planks of Oak, to fence the Deck of our Barque in the nature of a Parapet, to cover it againſt the Arrows of the Savages, in caſe they deſign'd to ſhoot at us from the Shoar. Then calling his Men together, he deſir'd them to obey M. *Tonti*'s Orders in his Abſence, to live in a Chriſtian Union and Charity; to be courageous and firm in their Deſign; and above all, to give no credit to the falſe Reports that the Savages might make unto them, either of him, or of their Comrades that were going with me. He aſſur'd them, that he would return with all the ſpeed imaginable, and bring along with him a freſh Supply of Men, Ammunition, and Rigging for our Barque, and that in the mean time he left them Arms, and other things neceſſary for a vigorous Defence, in caſe their Enemies ſhould attack them before his Return.

He told me afterwards, that he expected I ſhould depart without any farther Delay; but I told him that tho' I had promis'd him to do it, yet a Defluxion I had on my Gums a Year ſince, as he knew very

well, obliged me to return to *Canada*, to be cur'd; and that I would then come back with him. He was very much ſurprized and told me, he would write to my Superiours, that I had obſtructed the good Succeſs of our Miſſion, and deſir'd Father *Gabriel* to perſuade me to the contrary. That good Man had been my Maſter, during my *Novitiate* in our Convent of *Bethune*, in the Province of *Artois*; and therefore I had ſo great a Reſpect for him, that I yielded to his Advice; and conſider'd that ſince a Man of his Age had ventur'd to come along with me in ſo dangerous a Miſſion, it would look as a Puſilanimity in me to return and leave him. That Father had left a very good Eſtate, being Heir of a Noble Family of the Province of *Burgundy*; and I muſt own, that his Example reviv'd my Courage upon ſeveral Occaſions.

M. *la Salle* was mightily pleas'd when I told him I was reſolv'd to go, notwithſtanding my Indiſpoſition: He embrac'd me, and gave me a *Calumet* of Peace; and two Men to manage our Canou, whoſe Names were *Anthony Auguel*, ſirnamed the *Picard du Gay*; and *Mitchel Ako*, of the Province of *Poictou*, to whom he gave ſome Commodities to the value of about 1000 Livers, to trade with the Savages, or make Preſents. He gave to me in particular, and for my own uſe, ten Knives, twelve Shooe-maker's Auls or Bodkins, a ſmall Roll of Tobacco from *Martinico*, about two pounds of *Raſſade*; that is to ſay, Little Pearls or Rings of colour'd Glaſs, wherewith the Savages make Bracelets, and other Works, and a ſmall Parcel of Needles to give to the Savages; telling me that he would have given me a greater quantity, if it had been in his Power.

The Reader may judge by theſe Particulars, of the reſt of my Equipage for ſo great an Undertaking; however, relying my ſelf on the Providence of God, I took my leave of M. *la Salle*, and embrac'd all our Men, receiving the Bleſſing of Father *Gabriel*, who

who told me ſeveral things, to inſpire me with Courage; concluding his Exhortation by theſe Words of the Scripure, *Viriliter age, & confortetur Cor tuum.*

M. *la Salle* ſet out a few days after for *Canada*, with three Men, without any Proviſions, but what they kill'd in their Journey, during which they ſuffer'd very much, by reaſon of the Snow, Hunger and cold Weather.

CHAP. XXXVI.

The Author ſets out from Fort Crevecœur *to continue his Voyage.*

WHoſoever will conſider the Dangers to which I was going to expoſe my ſelf, in an unknown Country, where no *European* had travelled before, and amongſt ſome Savages whoſe Language I did not underſtand, will not blame the Reluctancy I expreſs'd againſt that Voyage: I had ſuch an Idea of it, that neither the fair Words or Threats of M. *la Salle*, would have been able to ingage me to venture my Life ſo raſhly, had I not felt within my ſelf a ſecret but ſtrong Aſſurance, if I may uſe that Word, that God would help and proſper my Undertaking.

We ſet out from Fort *Crevecœur* on the 29th of *February*, 1680, and as we fell down the River, we met with ſeveral Companies of Savages, who return'd to their Habitations, with their *Pyrogues* or Wooden-Canou's, loaded with the Bulls they had kill'd: they would fain perſuade us to return with them, and the two Men who were with me, were very willing to follow their Advice; telling me that M. *la Salle* had as good to have murther'd us: But I oppos'd their Deſign, and told them that the reſt of our Men would ſtop them as they ſhould come by the Fort, if they offer'd to return, and ſo we continu'd our Voyage. They confeſs'd to me the next Day, that they had

reſolv'd to leave me with the Savages, and make their Eſcape with the Canou and Commodities thinking that there was no Sin in that, ſince M. *la Salle* was indebted to them in a great deal more than their Value; and that I had been very ſafe. This was the firſt Diſcouragement I met with, and the Fore-runner of a great many others.

The River of the *Illinois* is very near as deep and broad as the *Meuſe* and *Sambre* before *Namur*; but we found ſome Places where 'tis about a quarter of a League broad. The Banks of the River are not even, but interrupted with Hills, diſpoſs'd almoſt at an equal diſtance, and cover'd with fine Trees. The Valley between them is a Marſhy Ground, which is overflowed after great Rains, eſpecially in the Autumn and the Spring. We had the Curioſity to go up one of thoſe Hills, from whence we diſcover'd vaſt Meadows, with Foreſts, ſuch as we had ſeen before we arriv'd at the Village of the *Illinois*. The River flows ſo ſoftly, that the Current is hardly perceptible, except when it ſwells: But it will carry at all times great Barques for above 100 Leagues, that is, from the ſaid Village to its Mouth. It runs directly to the South-Weſt. On the 7th of *March* we met, within two Leagues from the River *Meſchaſipi*, a Nation of the Savages call'd *Tamaroa* or *Maroa*, conſiſting of about 200 Families. They deſign'd to bring us along with them to their Village, which lies to the Weſt of *Meſchaſipi*, about ſeven Leagues from the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*; but my Men follow'd my Advice, and wou'd not ſtop, in hopes to exchange their Commodities with more Advantage in a more remote Place. Our Reſolution was very good; for I don't queſtion but they would have robb'd us; for ſeeing we had ſome Arms, they thought we were going to carry them to their Enemies. They purſued us in their *Pyrogues* or Woodden-Canou's; but ours being made of Bark of Birch-Trees, and conſequently ten times lighter than theirs, and better fram'd, we laught at their Endeavours,

deavours, and got clear of them. They had ſent a Party of their Warriours to lie in Ambuſcade on a Neck of Land advancing into the River, where they thought we ſhould paſs that Evening or the next Morning; but having diſcover'd ſome Smoak on that Point, we ſpoil'd their Deſign, and therefore croſs'd the River and landed in a ſmall Iſland near the other ſide, where we lay all the Night, leaving our Canou in the Water under the Guard of a little Dog; who doubtleſs wou'd have awak'd us, if any body had offered to come near him; as we expected the Savages might attempt it ſwimming over in the Night; but no body came to diſturb us. Having thus avoided thoſe Savages, we came to the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*, diſtant from their great Village about 100 Leagues, and 50 from Fort *Crevecœur*, It falls into the *Meſchaſipi* between 35 and 36 Degrees of Latitude, and within a 120 or 130 Leagues from the Gulph of *Mexico*, according to our Conjecture, without including the Turnings and Windings of the *Meſchaſipi*, from thence to the Sea.

The Angle between the two Rivers on the South-ſide is a ſteep Rock of forty Foot high, and flat on the Top, and conſequently a fit Place to build a Fort; and on the other ſide of the River, the Ground appears blackiſh, from whence I judge that it would prove fertile, and afford two Crops every Year for the ſubſiſtence of a Colony. The Soil looks as if it had been already manur'd.

The Ice which came down from the Source of the *Meſchaſipi*, ſtopp'd us in that place till the 12th of *March*; for we were afraid of our Canou: But when we ſaw the Danger over, we continued our Courſe ſounding the River, to know whether it was navigable. There are three ſmall Iſlands over-againſt the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*, which ſtop the Trees and Pieces of Timber that come down the River; which by ſucceſſion of time, has form'd ſome Banks: But the Canals are deep enough for the great-

eſt Barques; and I judge that in the drieſt Summer there is Water enough for flat-bottom-Boats.

The *Meſchaſipi* runs to the South-South-Weſt, between two Ridges of Mountains, which follow the great Windings of the River. They are near the Banks, at the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*, and are not very high; but in other Places, they are ſome Leagues diſtant; and the Meadows between the River and the Foot of thoſe Hills, are covered with an infinite number of wild Bulls. The Country beyond thoſe Hills is ſo fine and pleaſant, that according to the Account I have had, one might juſtly call it the *Delight of America.*

The *Meſchaſipi* is in ſome places a League broad, and half a League where it is narroweſt. The Rapidity in its Current is ſomewhat abated, by a great number of Iſlands, cover'd with fine Trees interlac'd with Vines. It receives but two Rivers from the Weſt Side, one whereof is call'd *Otontenta*; and the other diſcharges it ſelf into it near the Fall of St. *Anthony of Padoua*, as we ſhall obſerve hereafter; But ſo many others run into the *Meſchaſipi* from the North, that it ſwells very much toward its Mouth.

I am reſolv'd to give here an Account of the Courſe of that River; which I have hitherto conceal'd, for the Sake of M. *la Salle*, who would aſcribe to himſelf alone the Glory, and the moſt ſecret part of this Diſcovery. He was ſo fond of it, that he has expos'd to viſible danger ſeveral Perſons, that they might not publiſh what they had ſeen, and thereby prejudice his ſecret Deſigns.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

The Courſe of the River Meſchaſipi *from the Mouth of the River of the* Illinois, *to the Sea; which the Author did not think fit to publiſh in his* Louiſiana; *with an Account of the Reaſons he had to undertake that Diſcovery.*

THere is no Man but remembers with Pleaſure the great Dangers he has eſcap'd; and I muſt confeſs, that when I call to mind the great Difficulties I was under at the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*, and the Perils I was expos'd to in the Diſcovery of the Courſe of the *Meſchaſipi*, my Joy and Satisfaction cannot be expreſs'd. I was as good as ſure that M. *la Salle* would ſlander me, and repreſent me to my Superiors as a willful and obſtinate Man, if I preſum'd to go down the *Meſchaſipi* inſtead of going up to the *North*, as I was deſired, and as we had conſerted together; and therefore I was very loath to undertake it: But on the other Hand, I was expos'd to ſtarve, and threatned by my two Men, that if I oppoſed their Reſolution of going down the River, they would leave me aſhore during the Night, and carry away the Canou where-ever they pleas'd; ſo that I thought it was reaſonable to prefer my own Preſervation to the Ambition of M. *la Salle*; and ſo I agreed to follow my Men; who ſeeing me in that good Diſpoſition, promis'd that they would be faithful unto me.

We ſhook Hands, to ſeal theſe Promiſes; and after Prayers imbark'd in our Canou the 8th of *March* 1680. The Ice which came down from the North, gave us a great deal of trouble; but we were ſo careful, that our Canou received no hurt; and after ſix hours Rowing, we came to a River of a Nation called *Oſages*, who live toward the *Meſſorites*. That River comes from the Weſtward, and ſeems as big as the *Meſchaſipi*; but the Water is ſo muddy that 'tis almoſt impoſſible to drink of it.

The

The *Iſſati*, who Inhabit towards the Source of the *Meſchaſipi*, make ſometimes Excurſions as far as the Place where I was then; and I underſtood afterwards from them, having learned their Language, that this River of the *Oſages* and *Meſſorites*, is form'd from ſeveral other Rivers which ſpring from a Mountain about twelve Day's Journey from its Mouth. They told me farther, that from that Mountain one might ſee the Sea, and now and then ſome great Ships; that the Banks of that River are inhabited by ſeveral Nations; and that they have abundance of wild Bulls and Beavers.

Tho' this River is very big, the *Meſchaſipi* does not viſibly ſwell by the acceſſion of it; but its Waters continue muddy to its Mouth, albeit ſeven other Rivers fall into it which are near as big as the *Meſchaſipi* and whoſe Waters are extraordinary clear.

We lay every Night in Iſlands, at leaſt if it were poſſible, for our greater Security; and as ſoon as we had roaſted or boyl'd our *Indian* Corn, we were very careful to put out our Fire; for in theſe Countries they ſmell Fire at two or three Leagues diſtance, according to the Wind. The Savages take a particular notice of it, to diſcover where their Enemies are and endeavour to ſurprize them.

The 9th we continu'd our Voyage, and ſix Leagues from the River of the *Oſages*, diſcover'd on the South-ſide of the *Meſchaſipi*, a Village, which we thought to be inhabited by the *Tamaroa*, who had purſu'd us, as I have related. Seeing no body appear, we landed, and went into their Cabins, wherein we found *Indian* Corn, of which we took ſome Buſhels, leaving in lieu of it ſix Knives, and a ſmall quantity of little Glaſs Beads. This was good luck for us, for we durſt not leave the River, and go a hunting for fear of falling into the Hands of the Savages.

The next Day, being the Tenth of *March*, we came to a River within Forty Leagues of *Tamaroa*; near which, as the *Illinois* inform'd us, there is a Nation

tion of Savages call'd *Ouadebache*. We remain'd there till the Fourteenth, becauſe one of our Men kill'd a wild Cow, as ſhe was ſwimming over the River, whoſe Fleſh we were obliged to dry with Smoak, to preſerve it from putrifying. Being thus provided with *Indian* Corn and Fleſh, we left that Place the Fourteenth, and ſaw nothing worth Obſervation. The Banks of the River are ſo muddy, and ſo full of Ruſhes and Reeds, that we had much ado to finda place to go aſhore.

The 15th we diſcover'd three Savages, who came from Hunting, or from ſome Expedition. As we were able to make head againſt them, we landed, and march'd up to them; whereupon they run away; but after ſome Signs, one return'd, and preſented us the *Calumet* of Peace, which we received; and the others came back. We did not underſtand a Word of what they ſaid; nor they, I ſuppoſe, what we told them: Tho' having nam'd them two or three different Nations, one anſwered three times *Chikacha*, or *Sikacha*, which was likely the Name of his Nation. They gave us ſome *Pelicans* they had kill'd with their Arrows, and we preſented them with part of our Meat. Our Canou being too little to take them in, they continu'd their way, making ſeveral Signs with their Hands to follow them along the Shore; but we quickly loſt the Sight of them.

Two days after, we ſaw a great number of Savages near the River-ſide; and heard immediately after a certain Noiſe, as of a Drum; and as we came near the Shore, the Savages cry'd aloud *Saſacoueſt*; that is to ſay, *Who goes there?* as I have been inform'd. We were unwilling to land; but they ſent us a *Pyrogue* or heavy Woodden Canou, made of the Trunk of a Tree, which they made hollow with Fire; and and we diſcover'd amongſt them the three Savages we had met two Days before. We preſented our *Calumet* of Peace which they received; but gave us to underſtand by Signs, that we muſt go to the *Akanſa*;

for

for they repeated ſo often that Word, pointing at the Savages a-ſhore, that I believe this is the right Name of their Nation. We could not avoid it; and as ſoon as we were landed, the three *Chikacha* took our Canou upon their Shoulders, and carry'd it to the Village. Theſe Savages received us very kindly, and gave us a Cabin for our ſelves alone; and preſented us with Beans, *Indian* Corn, and Fleſh to eat. We made them alſo ſome Preſents of our *European* Commodities, which they admir'd: They put their Fingers upon their Mouth, eſpecially when they ſaw our Guns; and I think this way of expreſſing their Surprize, is common to all the Savages of the Northern *America*.

Theſe Savages are very different from thoſe of the North, who are commonly ſad, penſive, and ſevere; where as theſe appear jovial, civil, and free. Their Youth are ſo modeſt that they dare not ſpeak before Old Men, unleſs they are ask'd any Queſtion. I obſerved they have tame Poultry, as Hens, Turkey-Cocks and Buſtards, which are as tame as our Geeſe. Their Trees began to ſhew their Fruit, as Peaches, and the like; which muſt be a great deal bigger than ours. Our Men lik'd very well the Manner of theſe People; and if they had found any Furrs and Skins to barter for their Commodities, they would have left me amongſt them; but I told them, that our Diſcovery was more important to them than their Trade; and adviſ'd them to hide their Commodities under-ground, which they might take again upon our return, and exchange them with the Savages of the North. They approv'd my Advice, and were ſenſible that they ſhould prevent many Dangers; for Men are covetous in all Countries.

The Eighteenth we embark'd again after having been entertained with Dancing and Feaſting; and carry'd away our Commodities, tho' the Savages were very loath to part with them; but having accepted our *Calumet* of Peace, they did not preſume to ſtop us by Force

CHAP. XXXVIII.

A Continuation of our Voyage on the River Meſchaſipi.

AS we fell down the River we look'd for a fit Place to hide our Commodities, and at laſt pitched upon one between two Eminences near a Wood. We took up the green Sodds, laid them by, and digg'd a Hole in the Earth, where we put our Goods, and cover'd them with Pieces of Timber and Earth, and then put on again the green Turf; ſo that it was impoſſible to ſuſpect that any Hole had been digg'd under it, for we flung the Earth into the River. We tore afterward the Bark of there Oaks and of a large Cotten-tree, and ingraved thereon four Croſſes, that we might not miſs the Place at our Return, We embarked again with all ſpeed, and paſt by another Village of Savages about Six Leagues from *Akanſa*, and then landed at another two Leagues lower, where we were kindly entertained; Men, Women, and Children came to meet us; which makes me believe that the firſt *Akanſa* had given notice of our Arrival, to all the Villages of their Nation. We made them ſome Preſents of little Value, which they thought very conſiderable. Preſents are the Symbols of Peace in all thoſe Countries.

The Twenty firſt thoſe Savages carry'd us in a *Pyrogue* to ſee a Nation farther off into the Country, which they call *Taenſa*; for they repeated often that Word, ſo that we could not but remember it. Thoſe Savages inhabit the Banks of a Lake form'd by the *Meſchaſipi*; but I had not time enough to make any particular Obſervation concerning ſeveral of the Villages which I ſaw.

Theſe Savages received us with much more Ceremonies than the *Akanſa*; for their Chief came in great Solemnity to the Shore to meet us. He had a kind

kind of a white Gown on, made of Cloth of Bark of Trees, which their Women ſpun; and two Men carry'd before him a thin Plate of Copper, as ſhining as Gold. We preſented our *Calumet* of Peace, which he receiv'd with Joy and much Gravity. The Men, Women and Children, who attended him, expreſs'd a great Reſpect for me, and kiſs'd the Sleeves of the *Habit of St. Francis*; which made me believe that they had ſeen ſome *Spaniſh Franciſcans* from *New Mexico*, it being uſual there to kiſs the *Habit of our Order*: But this is a meer Conjecture; tho' I obſerv'd they did not pay that Reſpect to the two Men that were with me.

The *Taenſa* conducted us into a fine Cabin of flat Ruſhes and ſhining Reeds, and entertain'd us as well as their Country could afford; and then Men and Women, who are half cover'd in that Country, danc'd together before us. Their way of Dancing is much more difficult than ours, but perhaps as pleaſant, were it not for their Muſick, which is very diſagreeable. Women repeat every Word the Men have ſung.

That Country is full of Palm-trees, wild Laurels, Plum-trees, Mulbery-trees, Peach-trees, Apple-trees, and Walnut-trees of five or ſix kinds, whoſe Nuts are a great deal bigger than ours. They have alſo ſeveral ſorts of Fruit-trees unknown in *Europe*, but I could not diſcern the Fruit, becauſe of the Seaſon of the Year.

The Manners and Temper of that Nation is very different from that of the *Iroqueſe*, *Hurons*, and *Illinois* Theſe are Civil, Eaſie, Tractable, and capable of Inſtructions; whereas the others are meer Brutes, as fierce and cruel as any wild Beaſts. We lay that Night in their Village, and were entertain'd as civilly as we could have wiſh'd for; and we did likewiſe our utmoſt to oblige them: We ſhew'd them the Effect of our Fire-Arms, and a Piſtol which ſhot four Bullets one after another, without needing to be new charg'd

Our

Our Men took their beſt Cloth, which pleas'd them very much; and they ſeem'd well ſatisfy'd with us, as they expreſs'd by many Signs and Demonſtrations. They ſent over-night to the *Koroa*, who are their Allies, to give them notice of our Arrival; and their Chief came the next Morning in great Ceremony to ſee us. They ſeem'd tranſported with Joy, and 'tis great pitty we could not underſtand what they told us, to know what Opinion they entertain'd of us, and from what Part of the World they fanſied we came. I order'd my Men to ſquare a Tree, and having made a Croſs, we planted it near the Cabin where we lay.

The Twenty ſecond we left that obliging People and the Chief of the *Koroa* attended us to his Village, which is ſituated about ten Leagues lower, upon the River, in a fertile Soil, which produces abundance of *Indian* Corn, and other things neceſſary for Life. We preſented them with three Axes, ſix Knives, ſeven Yards of good Tobacco, ſeveral Awls and Needles. They receiv'd our Preſents with great Shouts, and their Chief preſented us with a *Calumet* of Peace of red Marble, the Quill whereof was adorn'd with Feathers of five or ſix ſorts of Birds.

They gave us alſo a Noble Treat according to their own way, which I lik'd very well; and after we had din'd, the Chief of that Nation underſtanding by our Signs which way we were bound, took a Stick, and made ſuch Demonſtrations, that we underſtood that we had not above ſeven Days Journey to the Sea, which he repreſented as a great Lake with large wooden Canou's. The next Day we prepar'd to continue our Voyage; but they made ſuch Signs to oblige us to ſtay a Day or two longer, that I was almoſt perſuaded to do it; but ſeeing the Weather ſo favourable for our Journey, we embark'd again. The Chief of that Nation, ſeeing we were reſolv'd to be gone, ſent ſeveral Men in two *Pyrogues*, to attend us to the Mouth of the River with Proviſions;

but

but when I ſaw that the three *Chikacha*, of whom I have ſpoken, followed us every where, I bid my Men to have care of them, and obſerve their Motions upon our landing, for fear of any Surprize. It was then *Eaſter*-day, which we kept with great Devotion tho' we could not ſay Maſs for want of Wine; but we ſpent all the Day in Prayers in ſight of the Savages, who wonder'd much at it.

The *Meſchaſipi* divides it ſelf into two Channels, and thereby forms a large Iſland, which to our thinking was very long, and might be about ſixty Leagues broad. The *Koroa* oblig'd us to follow the Canal to the Weſtward, tho' the *Chikacha*, who were in their *Pyrogues*, endeavour'd to perſwade me to take the other: But as we had ſome ſuſpicion of them, we refus'd to follow their Advice; tho I was afterwards convinc'd, that they deſign'd only to have the Honour to bring us to ſeveral Nations on the other ſide of the River. whom we viſited in our Return.

We loſt quickly the Company of our Savages; for the Stream being very rapid in this Place, they could not follow us in their *Pyrogues*, which are very heavy. We made that Day near forty Leagues, and landed in the evening upon the Iſland, where we pitch'd our Cabin.

The Twenty fourth we continu'd our Voyage; and about five and thirty Leagues below the Place we had lain, we diſcover'd two Fiſhermen, who Immediately ran away. We heard ſome time after a great Cry, and the Noiſe of a Drum; but as we ſuſpected the *Chikacha*, we kept in the middle of the River, rowing as faſt as we could. This was the Nation of *Quinipiſſa*, as we underſtood ſince. We landed that Night in a Village belonging to the Nation of *Tangibac*, as we have been inform'd; but the Inhabitants had been ſurpriz'd by their Enemies, for we found ten of them murther'd in their Cabins; which oblig'd us to embark again, and croſs the River, where we landed, and having made a Fire, roaſted our *Indian* Corn.

The

The Twenty Fifth we left the Place early in the Morning; and after having row'd the beſt part of the Day came to a Point where the *Meſchaſipi* divides it ſelf into three Chanels: We tooke the middle one, which is very Broad and Deep. The Water began there to taſte brackiſh, but four Leagues Lower it was as ſalt as the Sea. We rowed about four Leagues farther, and diſcovered the Sea, which obliged us to go a-ſhore to the Eaſtward of the River.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Reaſons which obliged us to return towards the Source of the River Meſchaſipi, *without going any farther toward the Sea.*

MY two Men were very much afraid of the *Spaniards* of *New Mexico*, who inhabit to the Weſtward of this River; and they were perpetually telling me, that if they were taken, the *Spaniards* would never ſpare their Lives or at leaſt give them the Liberty to return into *Europe*. I knew their Fears were not altogether unreaſonable; and therefore I reſolved to go no further, tho' I had no reaſon to be afraid for my ſelf, our Order being ſo numerous in *New Mexico*, that, on the contrary, I might expect to have had in that Country a peaceable and eaſie Life.

I don't pretend to be a Mathematician, but having learned to take the Elevation of the Pole, and make uſe of the Aſtrolabe, I might have made ſome exact Obſervations, had M. *la Salle* truſted me with that Inſtrument: However, I obſerved that the *Meſchaſipi* falls into the Gulph of *Mexico*, between the 27th and 28th Degrees of Latitude, where, as I believe, our Maps mark a River call'd *Rio Eſcondido*, the Hidden River. The *Magdalen* River runs between this River and the Mines of *St. Barbe* that are in *New Mexico*.

The Mouth of the *Meſchaſipi* may be about thirty Leagues from *Rio Bravo*, ſixty from *Palmas*, and eighty or a hundred from *Rio Panuco*, the neareſt Habitation of the *Spaniards*; and according to theſe Obſervations, the Bay *di Spirito Sancto* lies to the North-Eaſt of the *Meſchaſipi*, which from the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois* to the Sea, runs directly to the South, or South-Weſt, except in its Windings and Turnings, which are ſo great, that by our Computation there are about 340 Leagues from the River of the *Illinois* to the Sea, whereas there are not above 130 in a direct Line. The *Meſchaſipi* is very deep, without being interrupted by any Sands, ſo that the biggeſt Ships may come into it. Its Courſe from its Source to the Sea may be 800 Leagues, including Windings and Turnings, as I ſhall obſerve anon, having travelled from its Mouth to its Head.

My Men were very glad of this Diſcovery, and to have eſcaped ſo many Dangers; but on the other hand, they expreſs'd a great deal of diſſatisfaction to have been at ſuch trouble without making any profit, having found no Furrs to exchange for their Commodities. They were ſo impatient to return, that they would never ſuffer me to build a Cabin upon the Shoar, and continue there for ſome days, the better to obſerve where we were. They ſquar'd a Tree of twelve foot high, and made a Croſs thereof, which we erected in that Place, leaving there a Letter ſigned by me and my two Men, containing an Account of our Voyage, of our Country, and Profeſſion. We kneel'd then near the Croſs, and having ſung the *Vexilla Regis*, and ſome other Hymns, embarked again on the firſt of *April* to return towards the Source of the River.

We ſaw no Body while we continued there, and therefore cannot tell whether any Natives inhabit that Coaſt. We lay, during the time we remain'd a-ſhore, under our Canou's ſupported with four Forks; and the better to protect us againſt the Rain, we

we had ſome Rolls of Birch-Bark, wherewith we made a kind of Curtains about our Canou, hanging from the top down to the ground. 'Tis obſervable, that during the whole Courſe of our Sailing, God protected us againſt the Crocodiles, which are very numerous in that River, and eſpecially towards the Mouth: They look'd dreadful, and would have attack'd us, had we not been very careful to avoid them. We were very good Husbands of our *Indian* Corn; for the Banks of the River being full of Reeds, it was almoſt impoſſible to land to endeavour to kill ſome Beaſts for our Subſiſtence.

Our Canou being loaded only with three Men and our Proviſions, did not draw three Inches-Water, and therefore we could row very near the Shore, and avoid the Current of the River; and beſides, my Men had ſuch a deſire to return to the North, That that very Day we came to *Tangibao*; but becauſe the Savages we had found murther'd in their Cabins, made us believe that that Place was not ſafe, we continued our Voyage all the Night long, after having ſupp'd, lighting a great Match to fright the Crocodiles away, for they fear nothing ſo much as Fire.

The next day, *April* 2. we ſaw towards break of Day a great Smoak not far from us, and a little while after we diſcovered four Savage Women loaded with Wood, and marching as faſt as they could to get to their Village before us; but we prov'd too nimble for them at firſt. However ſome Buſtards coming near us, one of my Men could not forbear to ſhoot at them; which ſo much frighted theſe Women, that they left their load of Wood, and run away to their Village, where they arrived before us. The Savages having heard the Noiſe, were in as great fear as their Wives, and left their Village upon our approach; but I landed immediately, and advanced alone with the *Calumet* of Peace; whereupon they returned, and received us with all the Reſpect and Civility imaginable. They brought us into a great Cabin, and

gave us ſeveral things to eat, ſending notice in the mean time to their Allies, that we were arriv'd there; ſo that a great number of People crowded about to ſee us. They admired our Guns, and lifting up their Hands to Heaven, made us conceive they compar'd them to Thunder and Lightning; but ſeeing us ſhoot Birds at a great diſtance, they were ſo amazed, that they could not ſpeak a word. Our Men were ſo kindly entertained, that had it not been for the Commodities they had hid under Ground, they would have remained among that Nation; and truly it was chiefly to prevent any ſuch thing that I ordered them to do it; judging from the Civility of thoſe Savages, that they were like to be tempted to remain with them. This Nation call'd themſelves *Quinipiſſa.*

We made them ſome ſmall Preſents, to ſhew our Gratitude for their kind Entertainment, and left that Place *April* 4. and row'd with ſuch diligence that we arrived the ſame Day at *Koroa.* That Nation was not frighted as at the firſt time, but receiv'd us with all imaginable Demonſtrations of Joy, carrying our Canou upon their Shoulders in a triumphant manner, and twelve Men dancing before us with fine Feathers in their hands. The Women follow'd us with their Children, who held me by my Gown and Girdle, expreſſing much the ſame kindneſs to my two Men. They conducted me in that manner to the Cabin they had prepar'd for us, made of fine Mats of painted Ruſhes, and adorned with white Coverings made of the Bark of Trees, ſpun as finely as our Linnen Cloth; and after we had refreſhed our ſelves, with the Victuals they had prepar'd for us, they left us alone to give us time to reſt our ſelves, which we did all the Night long. The next Morning I was ſurpriz'd to ſee their *Indian* Corn, which we left very green, grown already to Maturity; but I have learned ſince, that that Corn is ripe ſixty Days after it is ſown. I obſerved there alſo another ſort of Corn; but for want

want of underſtanding their Language, I was not able to know its Uſe and Name.

CHAP. XL.

An Account of our Departure from Koroa, *to continue our Voyage.*

I Left *Koroa* the next Day, *April* 5. with a deſign to viſit ſeveral Nations inhabiting the Coaſt of the *Meſchaſipi*, but my Men would never conſent thereunto, telling me that they had no buſineſs there, and they were obliged to make all the haſt they could towards the North, to exchange their Commodities for Furrs. I told them that the Publick Good was to be preferr'd to Private Intereſt; but I could not perſwade them to any ſuch thing; and they told me that every one ought to be free; that they were reſolv'd to go towards the Source of the River, but that I might remain amongſt thoſe Nations, if I thought fit. In ſhort, I found my ſelf obliged to ſubmit to their Will, though they had receiv'd Orders to obey my Direction. We arriv'd the 7th in the Habitation of the *Taenſa's*, who had already been informed of our return from the Sea, and were prepared to receive us; having for that end ſent for their Allies inhabiting the in-land Country to the Weſt-ward of the River. They us'd all poſſible endeavours to oblige us to remain with them, and offered us a great many things; but our Men would not ſtay one ſingle Day; though I confeſs the Civility of that People, and the good Diſpoſition I obſerved in them, would have ſtopp'd me amongſt them, had I been provided with things neceſſary for the Function of my Miniſtry.

We parted the 8th, and the *Taenſa's* followed us ſeveral Leagues in their lighteſt *Pyrogues*, but were at laſt obliged to quit us, being not able to keep pace with our Canou. One of our Men ſhot three Wild-

Ducks at once, which they admir'd above all things, it being impoſſible to do ſo with their Arrows. We gave them ſome Tobacco, and parted from them, our Men rowing with all their Strength, to let them ſee we had kept company with them out of meer Civility.

The 9th, we came to the Place where our Men had hidden their Commodities; but when my Men ſaw that the Savages had burnt the Trees which we had mark'd, they were ſo afraid, that they were near ſowning away, and did not doubt but their Goods were loſt. We went a-ſhore; and while I was mending our Canou, they went to look for their Treaſure, which they found in good condition. They were ſo tranſported with Joy, that *Picard* came immediately to tell me that all was well. In the mean time, the *Akanſa's* having receiv'd advice of our Return, came down in great numbers along the River to meet us; and leſt they ſhould ſee our Men taking again their goods from under the Ground, I advanced to meet them with the *Calumet* of Peace, and ſtopt them to ſmoak, it being a ſacred Law amongſt them to ſmoak in ſuch a Juncture; and whotſoever would refuſe, muſt run the danger of being murther'd by the Savages, who have an extraordinary Veneration for the *Calumet*.

Whilſt I ſtopt them, my Men put their Commodities into their Canou, and came to take me into it. The Savages ſaw nothing of it, of which I was very glad; for though they were our own, perhaps they might claim part of them upon ſome Pretence or other. I made ſeveral ſigns upon the Sand, to make them apprehend what I thought; but with what Succeſs I don't know, for I could not underſtand a word of what they ſaid, their Language having no affinity with thoſe of their Neighbours I have convers'd withall, both ſince and after my Voyage to the Mouth of the *Meſchaſipi*.

I got into the Canou, and went by Water to the Village of the *Akanſa's*, while they went by Land; but

but our Men row'd ſo faſt, that they could hardly keep pace with us. One of them, who was a good Runner, arriv'd at the Village before us, and came to the Shoar with the Women and Children to receive us, which they did even with more Civility than they had expreſs'd the firſt time. Our Men ſuſpected that this was only to get our Commodities, which they admir'd; but they are certainly a good ſort of People; and inſtead of deſerving the Name of a Barbarous Nation, as the *Europeans* call all the Natives of *America*, I think they have more Humanity than many Natives of *Europe*, who pretend to be very civil and affable to Strangers.

It would be needleſs to give here an exact Account of the Feaſts and Dances that were made for our Entertainment, or of the Melancholy they expreſs'd upon our Departure. I muſt own, that I had much a-do to leave them, but my two Men would not give me leave to tarry a day, ſeeing theſe Nations, having had no Commerce with the *Europeans*, did not know the Value of Beavers Skins, or other Furrs, whereas they thought that the Savages inhabiting about the Source of the *Meſchaſipi*, might have been inform'd thereof by the Inhabitants of the Banks of the upper or Great Lake, which we found to be true, as we ſhall obſerve anon. We left the *Akanſa's* upon the 24th of *April*, having preſented them with ſeveral little Toys, which they receiv'd with an extraordinary Joy; and during ſixty Leagues, ſaw no Savage neither of the Nation of *Chikacha*, or *Meſſorite*, which made us believe they were gone a hunting with their Families, or elſe fled away, for fear of the Savages of *Tintonha*, that is to ſay, ſuch as inhabit the Meadows, who are their irreconcileable Enemies.

This made our Voyage the more eaſie, for our Men landed ſeveral times to kill ſome Fowl and other Game, with which the Banks of the *Meſchaſipi* are plentifully ſtock'd; however, before we came to the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*, we diſcover'd

ſeveral of the *Meſſorites*, who came down all along the River; but as they had no *Pyrogues* with them, we croſs'd to the other ſide; and to avoid any Surprize during the Night, we made no fire; and thereby the Savages could not diſcover whereabout we were; for doubtleſs they would have murther'd us, thinking we were their Enemies.

I had quite forgot to relate, that the *Illinois* had told us, that towards the Cape, which I have call'd in my Map St. *Anthony* near the Nation of the *Meſſorites*, there were ſome *Tritons*, and other Sea-Monſters painted, which the boldeſt Men durſt not look upon, there being ſome Enchantment in their Faces. I thought this was a Story; but when we came near the Place they had mention'd, we ſaw inſtead of theſe Monſters, a Horſe and ſome other Beaſts painted upon the Rock with red Colours by the Savages. The *Illinois* had told us likewiſe, that the Rock on which theſe dreadful Monſters ſtood, was ſo deep that no Man could climb up to it; but had we not been afraid of the Savages more than of the Monſters, we had certainly got up to them. There is a common Tradition amongſt that People, That a great number of *Miami's* were drown'd in that Place, being purſued by the Savages of *Matſigamea*; and ſince that time the Savages going by the Rock, uſe to ſmoke and offer Tobacco to thoſe Beaſts to appeaſe, as they ſay, the *Manitou*, that is, in the Language of the *Algonquins* and *Accadians*, an evil Spirit, which the *Iroqueſe* call *Otkon*; but the Name is the only thing they know of him.

While I was at *Quebec*, I underſtood that M. *Jolliet* had been upon the *Meſchaſipi*, and oblig'd to return without going down that River, becauſe of the Monſters I have ſpoken of, who had frighted him, as alſo becauſe he was afraid to be taken by the *Spaniards*; and having an opportunity to know the Truth of that Story from M. *Jolliet* himſelf, with whom I had often Travell'd upon the River St. *Laurence*, I asked

ask'd him whether he had been as far as the *Akanſa's?* That Gentleman anſwer'd me, That the *Outtaouats* had often ſpoke to him of thoſe Monſters; but that he had never gone farther than the *Hurons* and *Outtaouats*, with whom we had remain'd to exchange our *European* Commodities with their Furrs. He added, that the Savages had told him, that it was not ſafe to go down the River, becauſe of the *Spaniards*. But notwithſtanding this Report, I have found no where upon that River any Mark, or Croſſes, and the like, that could perſuade me that the *Spaniards* had been there; and the Savages inhabiting the *Meſchaſipi* would not have expreſs'd ſuch Admiration as they did when they ſaw us, if they had ſeen any *Europeans* before. I'll examine this Queſtion more at large in my Second Volume.

CHAP. XLI.

A particular Account of the River Meſchaſipi; *Of the Country through which it flows; and of the Mines of Copper, Lead and Coals we diſcovered in our Voyage.*

FRom thirty Leagues below *Maroa*, down to the Sea, the Banks of the *Meſchaſipi* are full of Reeds or Canes; but we obſerv'd about forty places, where one may land with great Facility. The River overflows its Banks now and then; but the Inundation is not very conſiderable, becauſe of the little Hills which ſtop its Waters. The Country beyond thoſe Hills is the fineſt that ever I ſaw, it being a Plain, whoſe bounds I don't know, adorned now and then with ſome Hills and Eminences cover'd with fine Trees, making the rareſt Proſpect in the World. The Banks of the ſmall Rivers flowing through the Plain, are planted with Trees, which look as if they had been diſpoſed into that curious Order by the Art of Men, and they are plentifully ſtock'd with Fiſh,

as

as well as the *Meſchaſipi*. The Crocodiles are very dangerous upon this great River, as I have already obſerv'd; and they devour a Man if they can ſurprize him; but it is eaſie to avoid them, for they don't ſwim after Men nor follow them a-ſhore.

The Country affords all ſorts of Game, as Turkey-Cocks, Partridges, Quails, Parrots, Wood-Cocks, Turtle Doves, and Wood-Pidgeons; and abundance of wild Bulls, wild Goats, Stags, Beavers, Otters, Martins, and wild Cats: But as we approach'd nearer the Sea, we ſaw no Beavers. I deſign to give a particular Account of theſe Creatures in another place; in the mean time we ſhall take notice of two others, who are unknown in *Europe*.

I have already mentioned a little Animal, like a Musk'd-Rat, that M. *la Salle* kill'd as we came from Fort *Miamis* to the *Illinois*, which deſerves a particular Deſcription. It looks like a Rat as to the Shape of its Body, but it is as big as a Cat. His Skin looks Silver-like, with ſome fair black Hair, which makes the Colour the more admirable. His Tail is without any Hair, as big as a Man's Finger, and about a Foot long, wherewith he hangs himſelf to the Boughs of Trees. That Creature has under the Belly a kind of a Bag, wherein they put their young ones when they are purſu'd; which is one of the moſt wonderful things of the World, and a clear Demonſtration of the Providence and goodneſs of the Almighty, who takes ſo particular a care of the meaneſt of his Creatures.

There is no fierce Beaſt in all that Country that dares attack Men; for the *Mechibichi*, the moſt terrible of all, and who devours all other Beaſts whatſoever, runs away upon the approach of a Savage. The Head of that Creature is very like that of the ſpotted Lynx, but ſomewhat bigger: His Body is long, and as large as a Wild Goat, but his Legs are ſhorter; his Paws are like a Cat's-Foot; but the Claws are ſo long and ſtrong, that no other Beaſt

can

can reſiſt them. When they have killed any Beaſt, they eat Part of it, and carry the reſt upon their Back to hide it in the Woods; and I have been told that no other Beaſt durſt meddle with it. Their Skin is much like that of a Lion, as well as their Tail: but their Head is much bigger.

TheSavages gave us to underſtand that to the Weſtward of their Habitation, there are ſome Beaſts who carry Men upon their Backs, and ſhew'd us the Hoof and part of the Leg of one, which was certainly the Hoof of a Horſe; and ſurely Horſes muſt not be utterly unknown in the Northern *America*: for then how could the Savages have drawn upon the Rock I have mentioned, the Figure of that Animal?

They have in that Country all ſorts of Trees we have in *Europe*, and a great many other unknown to us. There are the fineſt Cedars in the World; and another ſort of Tree, from which drops a moſt fragrant Gum, which in my opinion exceeds our beſt Perfumes. The Cotton-Trees are of a prodigious height; the Savages make them hollow with Fire, to make their *Pyrogues* of them; and we have ſeen ſome of them all of a Piece, above an hundred Foot long. The Oak is ſo good, that I believe it exceeds ours for Building Ships. I have obſerved that Hemp grows Naturally in that Country, and that they make Tarr and Pitch towards the Sea-Coaſts; and as I don't queſtion but that there are ſome Iron-Mines, the Building of Men of War would be very cheap in the River *Meſchaſipi*.

I took notice in my Deſcription of *Louiſiana*, that there are vaſt Meadows, which need not to be grubb'd up, but are ready for the Plow and Seed; and certainly the Soil muſt be very fruitful, ſince Beans grow Naturally without any Culture. Their Stalks ſubſiſt ſeveral Years, bearing Fruit in the proper Seaſons: They are as big as ones Arms, and climb up the higheſt Trees, juſt as Ivy does. The Peach-Trees are like

like ours, and ſo fruitful, that they wou'd break if they were not ſupported. Their Foreſts are full of Mulberry-Trees and Plum-Trees, whoſe Fruit is be-musk'd. They have alſo plenty of Pomegranate-Trees and Cheſtnut-Trees: and 'tis obſervable, that all theſe Trees are cover'd with Vines, whoſe Grapes are very big and ſweet.

They have three or four Crops of *Indian* Corn in one Year; for they have no other Winter than ſome Rain. We had not time enough to look for Mines; but we found in ſeveral Places ſome Pit-Coal; and the Savages ſhew'd us great Mines of Lead and Copper. They have alſo Quarries of Freeſtone; and of black, white, and Jaſper-like Marble, of which they make their *Calumets*.

Theſe Savages are good-natur'd Men, affable, civil, and obliging; but I deſign to make a particular Tract concerning their Manners, in my *Second Volume*. It ſeems they have no Sentiments of Religion; though one may judge from their Actions that they have a kind of Veneration for the Sun, which they acknowledge, as it ſeems, for the Maker and Preſerver of all things.

When the *Nadoueſſians* and *Iſſati* take Tobacco, they look upon the Sun, which they call in their Language *Louis*; and as ſoon as they have lighted their Pipe, they preſent it to the Sun with theſe Words *Tchendiouba Louis*, that is to ſay *Smoak Sun*; which I took for a kind of Adoration. I was glad when I heard that this only *Deity* was call'd *Louis*, becauſe it was alſo my Name. They call the Moon *Louis Baſatſche* that is to ſay, *The Sun of the Night*; ſo that the Moon and Sun have the ſame Name, except that the Moon is diſtinguiſh'd by the Word *Baſatſche*.

They offer alſo to the Sun the beſt Part of the Beaſt they kill; which they carry to the Cabin of their Chief, who makes his Profit thereof, and mumbles ſome Words as it raiſes. They offer alſo the firſt Smoak of their *Calumets*, and then blow the Smoak towards

towards the four Corners of the World. This is all I have obſerv'd concerning their Religion; which makes me believe that they have a Religious Veneration for the Sun.

CHAP. XLII.

An Account of the various Languages of the Nations Inhabiting the Banks of the Meſchaſipi; *of their Submiſſion to their Chief; of the Difference of their Manners from the Savages of* Canada; *and of the Difficulties, or rather Impoſſibilities attending their Converſion.*

'TIS very ſtrange that every Nation of the Savages of the Northern *America* ſhould have a peculiar Language; for though ſome of them live not ten Leagues one from another, they muſt uſe an Interpreter to talk together, there being no univerſal Language amongſt them; as one may call the *Lingua Franca*, which is underſtood upon all the Coaſt of the *Mediterranean-Sea*; or the *Latin* Tongue, common to all the Learned Men of *Europe*. However thoſe, who live ſo near one another, underſtand ſome Words us'd among their Neighbours, but not well enough to treat together without an Interpreter; and therefore they us'd to ſend one of their Men to each of their Allies, to learn their Language, and remain with them as their Reſident, and take Care of their Concerns.

Theſe Savages differ from thoſe of *Canada* both in their Manners, Cuſtoms, Temper, Inclinations, and even in the Shape of their Heads; theſe of the *Meſchaſipi* having their Heads very flat. They have large Places in their Villages, where they meet together upon any publick Rejoycings; and where they have publick Games at Certain Seaſons of the Year. They are lively and active, having nothing of that Moroſity and Penſiveneſs of the *Iroqueſe* and others. Their Chiefs have a more abſolute Authority

rity than thoſe of the other Savages, which Power is very narrow; and thoſe who live the neareſt to the Mouth of the River, have ſuch a Deference for their Chief, that they dare not paſs between him and a Flambeau, which is always carry'd before him in all Ceremonies. Theſe Chiefs have Servants and Officers to wait upon them: They diſtribute Rewards and Preſents as they think fit. In ſhort, they have amongſt them a Form of Political Government; and I muſt own they make a tolerable uſe of their Reaſon.

They were altogether ignorant of Fire-Arms, and all other Inſtruments and Tools of Iron and Steel, their Knives and Axes being made of Flint, and other ſharp Stones: And whereas we were told that the *Spaniards* of *New-Mexico* liv'd not above forty Leagues from them, and ſupply'd them with all the Tools and other Commodities of *Europe*; we found nothing among them that might be ſuſpected to come from the *Europeans*, unleſs it be ſome little pieces of Glaſs ſtrung upon a Thread, with which their Women uſe to adorn their Heads. They wear Bracelets and Ear-Rings of fine Pearls, which they ſpoil having nothing to boar them with, but by Fire. They made us to underſtand that they have them in exchange for their *Calumets*, from ſome Nations inhabiting the Coaſt of the great Lake to the Southward, which I take to be the *Gulph of Florida*.

I'll ſay nothing here, or at leaſt very little, concerning their Converſion, reſerving to diſcourſe fully upon that Subject, in another *Volume*, wherein I promiſe my ſelf to undeceive many People about the falſe Opinions they entertain on this Matter. Wherever the Apoſtles appear'd, they converted ſo great a number of People, that the Goſpel was known and believ'd in a ſhort time, thro' moſt part of the then known World. But our Modern Miſſions are not attended with that Grace and Power, and therefore we are not to expect thoſe miraculous Converſions. I

have

have imparted to them, as well as I cou'd, the chief and general Truths of the *Chriſtian Religion:* But, as I have obſerv'd already, the Languages of thoſe Nations having little or no Affinity one with another, I cannot ſay that my Endeavours have been very ſucceſsful, tho' I learn'd the Language of the *Iſſati* or *Nadouſſians*, and underſtood indifferently well that of the *Illinois:* But the Truths of Chriſtianity are ſo ſublime, that I fear, neither my words nor Signs and Actions have been able to give them an Idea of what I preach'd unto them. GOD alone, who knows the Hearts of Men, knows alſo what Succeſs my Endeavours have had. The Baptiſm I have adminiſter'd to ſeveral Children, of whoſe Death I was morally aſſur'd, is the only certain Fruit of my Miſſion. But after all, I have only diſcover'd the Way for other Miſſionaries, and ſhall be ready at all times to return thither, thinking my ſelf very happy if I can ſpend the reſt of my Dayes in endeavouring my own and other Mens Salvation; and eſpecially in favour of thoſe poor Nations, who have been hitherto ignorant of their Creator and Redeemer. But leſt I ſhould tire the Reader, I reaſſume the Thread of my Diſcourſe.

CHAP. XLIII.

An Account of the Fiſhery of the Sturgeons; and of the Courſe we took, for fear of meeting ſome of our Men from Fort Crevecœur.

WE embarqu'd the Twenty fourth of *April*, as I have already ſaid; and our Proviſions being ſpent ſome dayes after, we had nothing to live upon but the Game we kill'd, or the Fiſh we cou'd catch. Stags, and wild Goats, and even wild Bulls are pretty ſcarce toward the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*; for this Nation comes as far as the *Meſchaſipi* to hunt them

them; but by good chance we found a great quantity of Sturgeon, with *long Bills*, as we call'd them, from the ſhape of their Head. It was then the Seaſon that the Fiſhes ſpawn; and they come as near the Shore they can; ſo that we kill'd as many as we wou'd with our Axes and Swords, without ſpending our Powder and Shott. They were ſo numerous, that we took nothing but the Belly, and other dainty Parts, throwing off the reſt.

As we came near the Mouth of the River of the *Illinois*, my Men began to be very much afraid to meet with their Comrades of Fort *Crevecœur*; for having not yet Exchang'd their Commodities, as they were order'd, and refus'd to go Northward at firſt, as I deſir'd them they had great reaſon to fear that they wou'd ſtop them, and puniſh them for not having followed my Directions. I was likewiſe afraid that by theſe Means our Voyage toward, the Sea wou'd be diſcover'd, (there being ſome Reaſons to keep it ſecret, as I ſhall obſerve in another place) and our farther Diſcovery ſtopt; and therefore to prevent any ſuch thing, I adviſ'd them to row all the Night, and to reſt our ſelves during the Day in the Iſlands, which are ſo numerous in that River. The Trees and Vines wherewith thoſe Iſlands are cover'd are ſo thick, that one can hardly land; and ſo we might lie there very ſafe, it being impoſſible to Diſcover us. This Advice was approv'd, and thereby we avoided any Rencounter; for I did not doubt but our Men came now and then from Fort *Crevecœur*, to obſerve the *Meſchaſipi*, and get Intelligence of us. But when we found our ſelves pretty far from the River of the *Illinois*, we travell'd in the Day-time, as we uſed to do, in order to make our Obſervations, and View the Country; which does not appear ſo fertil, nor cover'd with ſo fine Trees above the River of the *Illinois*, as it is below, down the *Meſchaſipi* to the Sea.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

A ſhort Account of the Rivers that fall into the Meſchaſipi; *of the Lake of Tears; of the Fall of* St. Anthony; *of the wild Oats of that Country; and ſeveral other Circumſtances of our Voyage.*

NO Rivers, as I have already ſaid, run into the *Meſchaſipi* between the River of the *Illinois* and the Fall of *St. Anthony*, from the Weſtward, but the River *Ottenta*, and another which diſcharges it ſelf into it within Eight Leagues of the ſaid Fall: But on the Eaſtward we met with a pretty large River, call'd *Ouiſconſin*, or *Miſconſin*, which comes from the Northward. This River is near as large as that of the *Illinois*; but I cannot give an exact Account of the length of its Courſe, for we left it about ſixty Leagues from its Mouth, to make a *Portage* into another River, which runs into the Bay of *Puans*, as I ſhall obſerve when I come to ſpeak of our return from *Iſſati* into *Canada*. This River *Ouiſconſin*, runs into the *Meſchaſipi* about an hundred Leagues above that of the *Illinois*.

Within five and twenty Leagues after, we met another River coming from the Eaſtward, nam'd by the *Iſſati* and *Nadouſſians*, *Chebadeba*, that is, *The Black River*. I can ſay very little of it, having obſerv'd only its Mouth; but I judge from that, that it is not very conſiderable. About thirty Leagues higher we found the Lake of *Tears*, which we nam'd ſo, becauſe the Savages, who took us, as will be hereafter related, conſulted in this Place, what they ſhould do with their Priſoners; and thoſe who were for murthering us, cry'd all the Night upon us, to oblige, by their Tears, their Companions to conſent to our Death. This Lake is form'd by the *Meſchaſipi*, and may be

ſeven Leagues long, and five broad. Its Waters are almoſt ſtagnant, the Stream being hardly perceptible in the middle. We met within a League above the Lake, another River, call'd, *The River of the Wild Bulls*, becauſe of the great number of thoſe Beaſts grazing upon its Banks. It falls with a great rapidity into the *Meſchaſipi*; but ſome Leagues above its Mouth, the Stream is very gentle and moderate. There is an infinite number of large Tortoiſes in that River, which are very reliſhing. A Row of Mountains fence its Banks in ſome places.

There in another River, which falls forty Leagues above this laſt, into the *Meſchaſipi*; thro' which one may go into the Upper Lake, by making a *Portage* from it into the River *Niſſipikouet*, which runs into the ſame Lake. It is full of Rocks and rapid Streams. We nam'd it *The River of the Grave*, or *Mauſolæum*, becauſe the Savages bury'd there one of their Men, who was bitten by a Rattle-Snake. They us'd great Ceremonies in his Funeral, which I ſhall deſcribe in another place; and I put upon his Corps a white Covering; for which the Savages returned me their publick Thanks, and made a great Feaſt, to which above an hundred Men were invited.

The Navigation of the *Meſchaſipi* is interrupted ten Leagues above this River of the *Grave*, by a Fall of fifty or ſixty Foot, which we called the Fall of *St. Anthony of Padua*, whom we had taken for the Protector of our Diſcovery. There is a Rock of a Pyramidal Figure, juſt in the middle of the Fall of the River.

The Row of Mountains fencing the Banks of the *Meſchaſipi*, ends at the Mouth of the River of *Ouiſconſin*; and there we likewiſe obſerved, that that River which runs from thence to the Sea almoſt directly North and South, runs then from the Weſtward or the North-Weſt. The Misfortune we had of being taken Priſoners, hindred us from going as far as its Source,

Source, which we cou'd never learn from the Savages, who told us only, that about twenty or thirty Leagues above the Fall of St. *Anthony*, there is another Fall; near which a Nation of Savages inhabit at certain Seaſons of the Year. They call thoſe Nations *Tintouha*, that is, *The Inhabitants of the Meadows.*

Eight Leagues above the Fall of St. *Anthony*, we met with the River of the *Iſſati* or *Nadouſſians*, which is very narrow at the Mouth, It comes out from the Lake of the *Iſſati*, lying about ſeventy Leagues from its Mouth. We called this River, *The River of St. Francis*; and it was in this Place that we were made ſlaves by the *Iſſati*.

The Courſe of the *Meſchaſipi*, according to our beſt computation, is about Eight hundred Leagues long from *Tintonha* to the Sea, including its Windings and Turnings; which are very great, and may be navigable from the Fall of St. *Anthony*, for flat-bottom'd Boats, provided the Iſlands were clear'd from Trees, and eſpecially from Vines, which having ty'd the Trees together, would ſtop a Boat in many places.

The Country about the Lake *Iſſati* is a Marſhy Ground, wherein grows abundance of Wild Oats, which grow without any Culture or Sowing, in Lakes, provided they are not above three Foot deep. That Corn is ſomewhat like our Oats, but much better; and its Stalks are a great deal longer when it is Ripe. The Savages gather it, and live thereupon ſeveral Months of the Year, making a kind of Broath thereof. The Savage Women are oblig'd to tie ſeveral Stalks together with White Bark of Trees, to fright away the Ducks, Teals, or Swans, which otherwiſe would ſpoil it before it be ripe.

This Lake of *Iſſati* lies within ſixty Leagues to the Weſtward of the Upper Lake; but 'tis impoſſible to travel by Land from one to the other, unleſs it be in

a hard Froſt, becauſe of the Marſhy Grounds, which otherwiſe ſink under a Man; but, as I have already ſaid, they may uſe their Canou's, tho' it be very troubleſom, becauſe of the many *Portages*, and the length of the Way, which, by reaſon of the Windings of the River, is about a hundred and fifty Leagues. The ſhorteſt way is by the River of the *Grave*, thro' which we went in our return. We found nothing but the Bones of the Savage we had bury'd there, the Bears having pulled out with their Paws the great Stakes the Savages had beat deep into the Ground round about the Corps; which is their uſual way of Burying their Dead. We found near the Grave, a *Calumet* or Pipe of War, and a Pot, in which the Savages had left ſome fat Meat of Wild Bulls, for the uſe of their dead Friend, during his Voyage into the Country of *Souls*; which ſheweth that they believe their Immortality.

There are many other Lakes near the River *Iſſati*, from which ſeveral Rivers ſpring. The Banks of thoſe Rivers are inhabited by the *Iſſati*, the *Nadouſſians*, the *Tintonha*, or *Inhabitants of Meadows*, the *Ouadebathon* or *Men of Rivers*, the *Chongasceton* or *Nation of the Wolf* or *the Dog*, for *Chonga* ſignifies either of theſe Creatures. There are alſo ſeveral other Nations, which we include under the general Denomination of *Nadouſſians*. Theſe Savages may bring into the Field eight or nine Thouſand Men: They are Brave, Bold, great Runners, and good Markſmen with their Arrows. It was a Party of theſe Savages that took us Priſoners, and carry'd us to the *Iſſati*, as I am going to relate in the following Chapter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLV.

The Author and his Canou-Men are taken by the Savages, who, after ſeveral Attempts upon their Lives, carry them away with them into their Country above the River Meſchaſipi.

WE uſed to go to Prayers thrice a Day, as I have elſewhere obſerved; and my conſtant Requeſt to God was, That when we ſhould firſt meet the Savages, it might happen to be by Day. Their Cuſtom is, to kill as Enemies all they meet by Night, to enrich themſelves with their Spoils, which are nothing but a parcel of Hatchets, Knives, and ſuch like Trifles; which yet they value more than we do Gold or Silver. They make no ſcruple to aſſaſſinate even their own Allies, when they think they can handſomly conceal the Murder; for by ſuch Exploits it is they hope to gain the Reputation of being great Soldiers, and to paſs for Men of Courage and Reſolution.

'Twas with a great deal of Satisfaction that we ſurvey'd the Pleaſures of the River *Meſchaſipi*, all along our Paſſage up it, which had been ſince the firſt of *April*. Nothing as yet had interrupted our Obſervations, whether it were Navigable above or below. In our way we kill'd ſeven or eight Buſtards or Wild-Turkeys, which in thoſe Countries encreaſe mightily, as well as all other Wild Creatures. We had alſo plenty of Bulls, Deers, Caſtors, Fiſh, and Bears-Fleſh; which laſt we kill'd as they were ſwimming over the River.

And here I cannot forbear ſeriouſly reflecting on that ſecret Pleaſure and Satisfaction of Mind, which is to be found in Prayer, and the real Advantages which may be drawn from thence, when I conſider how

effectually my own were heard: For the ſame Day, being the Twelfth of *April*, as our two Men were boiling one of the Buſtards, and my ſelf refitting our Canou on the Banks of the River, I perceived all of a ſudden about two in the Afternoon, no leſs than fifty Canou's which were made of Bark, and mann'd with a hundred and twenty Savages, who were ſtark naked, and came down the River with an extraordinary Swiftneſs, to ſurprize the *Miami's*, *Illinois*, and *Marhoans* their Enemies.

We threw away the Broath which was a preparing, and getting aboard as faſt as we could, made towards them, crying out thrice, *Miſtigouche*, and *Diatchez*, which in the Language of the *Iroqueſe* and *Algonquins*, is as much as to ſay, *Comrades, we are Men of Wooden Canou's*; for ſo they call thoſe that Sail in great Veſſels. This had no effect, for the Barbarians underſtood not what we ſaid; ſo that they ſurrounded us immediately, and began to let fly their Arrows at a diſtance, till the Eldeſt amongſt them perceiving that I had a *Calumet* or Pipe of Peace in my hand, came up to us, and prevented our being murder'd by their Warriours.

Theſe Men who are more brutal than thoſe of the lower River, fell a jumping out of their Canou's, ſome upon Land; others into the Water; ſurrounding us on all ſides with Shrieks and Out-cries that were indeed very terrifying. 'Twas to no purpoſe to reſiſt, being but three to ſo great a number. One of them ſnatcht the Pipe of Peace out of my Hand, as our Canou and theirs were faſtned together on the Bank of the River. We preſented them with ſome ſmall pieces of *Martinico* Tobacco, becauſe it was better than what they had. As they received it, the Elders of them cry'd out *Miahima*, *Miahima*; but what they meant by it, we knew not. However, we made Signs with our Oars upon the Sand, that the *Miami's* their Enemies, whom they were in ſearch of, had

paſs'd

paſs'd the River, and were upon their Flight to join the *Illinois*.

When they ſaw themſelves diſcovered, and conſequently out of all hopes of ſurprizing their Enemies, three or four of the Eldeſt of them laid their hands on my Head, and began to weep bitterly, accompanying their Tears with ſuch mournful Accents as can hardly be expreſſed; till with a ſorry Handkerchief of *Armenian* Cloth, which I had left, I made a ſhift to dry up their Tears: However, to very little purpoſe; for refuſing to Smoak in our *Calumet* or Pipe of Peace. they thereby gave us to underſtand, that their Deſign was ſtill to Murder us. Hereupon with an horrid Out-cry, which they ſet up all at once, to make it yet the more terrible, they hurry'd us Croſs the River, forcing us to redouble the the Stroaks of our Oar, to make the more ſpeed, and entertaining us all the while with ſuch diſmal Howlings, as were capable of ſtriking Terrour into the moſt reſolute aud daring Souls. Being come a-ſhore on the other ſide, we unloaded our Canou, and landed our Things, part of which they had robb'd us of already. Sometime after our Landing, we made a fire a ſecond time, to make an end of boiling our Buſtard. Two others we preſented the Barbarians, who having conſulted together what they ſhould do with us, two of their Leaders came up to us, and made us to underſtand by Signs, that their Warriours were reſolved upon our Death. This obliged me, whilſt one of our Canou-Men look'd after our Things, to go with the other, and apply my ſelf to their Chiefs. Six Hatchets, fifteen Knives, ſome pieces of Tobacco, was the Preſent that I made them. After which, bending my Neck, and pointing to a Hatchet, I ſignified to them by that Submiſſion, that we threw our ſelves on their Mercy.

The Preſent had the good effect to ſoften ſome of them, who, according to their Cuſtom, gave us

ſome Fleſh of Beaver to eat, themſelves putting the three firſt Bits in our Mouths; having firſt blown upon it, becauſe the Meat was hot. After this they ſet their platter before us, which was made of the Bark of a Tree, leaving us at liberty to feed after our own faſhion. Theſe Civilities did not hinder us from paſſing the Night very uneaſily, becauſe in the Evening before they went to ſleep, they had returned us our *Calumet* of Peace. The two Canou-Men reſolved to ſell their Lives as dear as they could, and to defend themſelves like Men to the laſt, in caſe they ſhould attack us. For my part, I told them I reſolved to ſuffer my ſelf to be ſlain without the leaſt Reſiſtance, in Imitation of our Saviour, who reſigned himſelf up voluntarily into the hand of his Executioner. However, we watch'd all Night by turns, that we might not be ſurpriz'd in our Sleep.

CHAP. XLVI.

The Reſolution which the Barbarians took to carry the Author and his two Men along with them up into their Country, above the River Meſchaſipi.

THE 13th of *April*, very early in the Morning, one of their Captains, whoſe Name was *Narhetoba*, being one of thoſe who had been for killing us, and whoſe Body was painted all over, came and demanded my Pipe of Peace. It being delivered him, he filled with it Tobacco of their own Growth, and made thoſe of his own Band ſmoak in it firſt; then all the reſt that had been for putting us to death. After this he made Signs, that we muſt go with them into their Country, whither they were then about to return. This Propoſal did not ſtartle me much, for having caus'd the Enterprize which they had fram'd

fram'd againſt their Enemies to miſcarry, I was not unwilling to embrace any opportunity of making farther Diſcoveries amongſt theſe barbarous Nations.

That which perplex'd me moſt, was the Difficulty I had of ſaying my Office, and performing the reſt of my Devotions, in the preſence of theſe Wretches. Many of them obſerving my Lips to move, told me in a harſh and ſevere Tone, *Ouackanche*; from whence, becauſe we underſtood not a word of their Language, we concluded them to be very angry. *Michael Ako*, one of the Canou-Men, told me with a frightful Air, that if I continu'd to ſay my Breviary, we ſhould infallibly be murther'd by them. *Picard du Gay* deſir'd me atleaſt to ſay my Prayers in private, for fear of enraging them too far. The laſt Advice ſeem'd the beſt; but the more I endeavour'd to conceal my ſelf, the more of them had I at my Heels. If at any time I retir'd into the Woods, they immediately concluded 'twas to hide ſomething: So that I knew not which way to turn me for the performance of my Duty; for they would never ſuffer me a moment out of their Sight.

This compell'd me at laſt to acquaint the two Canou-Men, that I could no longer diſpenſe with my ſelf in omitting the Duty of my Office, That if they ſhould murder us on this Account, I ſhould indeed be the innocent Cauſe of their Death as well as my own; that therefore I ran the ſame Riſque as they, but that no Danger was great enough to juſtifie me in the Diſpenſing with my Duty. In fine, the Barbarians underſtood by the Word *Ouackanche* that the Book in which I read, was an evil Spirit, as I afterwards underſtood by being amongſt them. However, I then knew by their Geſtures, that they had had an averſion for it. Wherefore to uſe them to it by degrees, I was wont to ſing the Litanies, as we were upon the Way, holding the Book in my Hand. They fondly

fondly believed my Breviary was a Spirit which taught me to ſing thus for their Diverſion. All theſe People naturally love Singing.

CHAP. XLVII.

The many Outrages done us by the Savages, before we arrived in their Country. They frequently deſign againſt our Lives.

THE many Outrages which were done us by theſe Barbarians, through the whole Courſe of our Voyage, are not to be imagin'd. Our Canou was both bigger and heavier laden than theirs. They ſeldom carry any thing but a Quiver full of Arrows, a Bow, and ſome ſorry Skin or other, which uſually ſerves two of them for a Coverlet. The Nights were ſharp as yet for the Seaſon, by reaſon of our advancing ſtill Northwards; ſo that at Night 'twas neceſſary to keep our ſelves as warm as we could.

Our Conductors obſerving that we did not make ſo much way as themſelves, order'd three of their Warriours to go aboard us. One ſeated himſelf on my Left, the other two behind the Men; to help them to row, that we might make the more haſte. The Barbarians ſometimes row no leſs than thirty Leagues a day, when they are in haſte to take the Field, and deſign to ſurprize their Enemies. Thoſe who took us were of divers Villages, and as much divided in their Sentiments, in regard of us. Every Evening 'twas our peculiar Care to plant our Cabin near the young Chief, who had taken Tobacco in our Pipe of Peace; ſignifying to him thereby, that we put our ſelves under his Protection,

This we did, by reaſon of the Diviſions which reigned amonſt the Savages. *Aquipaguetin*, one of their Chiefs, who had a Son kill'd by the *Miami's*, finding

finding he could not revenge himſelf of that Nation, thought of venting his Paſſion upon us. Every Night would he bewail his Son, whom he had loſt in the War, thinking thereby to ſtir up thoſe of his Band to revenge his Death, by killing us, ſeizing our Effects, and after that purſuing the *Miami's*. But the other Savages, who were very fond of *European* Commodities, thought it more adviſeable to protect us, that other *Europeans* might be encourag'd to come amongſt them. They chiefly deſir'd Guns, upon which they ſet the higheſt Value, having ſeen the uſe of them upon one of our Canou-Men's killing three or four wild Buſtards or wild Turkies at one ſingle Diſcharge of his Fuſil; whereas they could not kill above one at a time with their Bows.

We have underſtood by them ſince, that the Words *Manza Ouackanche* ſignifie, *Iron poſſeſs'd by an Evil Spirit*. So they call the Fuſil, which breaks a Man's Bones; whereas their Arrows glide only between the Fleſh and the Muſcles, which they pierce without breaking the Bone at all, or very ſeldom at leaſt. For which reaſon it is, that theſe People do much eaſier cure the Wounds which are made by the Arrow or Dart, than thoſe of the Fuſil.

When we were firſt taken by the Barbarians, we were got about an hundred and fifty Leagues up the River, from that of the *Illinois*. We row'd afterwards in their Company for nineteen Days together, ſometimes North, ſometimes North-Eaſt, as we judg'd by the Quarters, from whence the Wind blew, and according to the beſt obſervations we cou'd make by our Compaſs. So that after theſe Barbarians had forc'd us to follow them, we made more than two hundred and fifty Leagues upon that ſame River. The Savages are of an extraordinary Force in a Canou. They'll row from Morning to Night without reſting, or hardly allowing themſelves ſo much time as to eat their Victuals.

To

To oblige us to follow them the faſter, there were uſually four or five of their Men a-board us; for our Canou was larger, and deeper loaden than theirs, ſo that we had need of their aſſiſtance, to be able to keep 'em company. When it rain'd, we ſet up our Tilts; but when 'twas fair, the Heavens were our Canopy. By this means we had leiſure to take our Obſervations from the Moon and the Stars when it was clear. Notwithſtanding the fatigue of the Day, the youngeſt of the Warriours went at Night and danc'd the *Reed* before four or five of their Captains till Midnight. The Captain to whoſe Quarter they went, ſent with a deal of Ceremony to thoſe that danc'd, a Warriour of his own Family, to make them ſmoak one after another in his own *Reed* of War, which is diſtinguiſh'd from that of Peace by its Feathers.

This ſort of Ceremony is always concluded by the two Youngeſt of thoſe who have had any Relations kill'd in the Wars. Theſe take ſeveral Arrows, and laying them a-croſs at the point, preſent them in that manner to their Captains, weeping very bitterly; who, notwithſtanding the exceſs of their Sorrow, return them back to be kiſs'd. In ſhort, neither the Fatigues of the Day, nor Watchings, are ſufficient to prevail with the Elders ſo much as to ſhut their Eyes, moſt of them watching till almoſt Break of Day, for fear of being ſurpriz'd by their Enemies. As ſoon as the Morning appears, one of them ſets up the ordinary Cry, when in a moment the Warriours are all in their Canou's. Some are ſent to encompaſs the Iſlands, and to ſee what Game they can meet with; whilſt others that are more ſwift go by Land to diſcover by the Smoak the Place where the Enemies lie.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVIII.

The Advantages which the Savages of the North have over thoſe of the South, in relation to the War: As alſo the Ceremony which was perform'd by one of our Captains, having caus'd us to halt at Noon.

WHen the Savages of the North are at War, 'tis their Cuſtom to poſt themſelves upon the point of ſome one of thoſe many Iſlands, of which this River is full, where they look upon themſelves to be always ſafe. Thoſe of the South, who are their Enemies, having nothing but *Pyrogues*, or Canou's of Wood, with which they cannot go very faſt, becauſe of their weight. None but the Northern Nations have Birch to make Canou's of their Bark. The People of the South are depriv'd of this Advantage, whereas thoſe of the North can with an admirable facility paſs from Lake to Lake, and River to River, to attack their Enemy: Nay, when they are diſcover'd they value it not, provided they have time to recover their Canou's; for 'tis impoſſible for thoſe who purſue them either by Land, or in the *Pyrogues*, to do it with any Succeſs.

As to what relates to Ambuſcades, no Nation in the World comes near thoſe Northern Savages, being patient of Hunger, and the Utmoſt Severities of the Weather, beyond belief. 'Tis their ſure Game; and they never fail being ſuccour'd by three or four of their Comrades, whenever their Enemies attack 'em. So that they always bring their Deſigns about this way at leaſt, if not over power'd ſo by Numbers, as not to be able to recover their Canou's, and ſave themſelves by flight.

One of the nineteen Days of our moſt tireſome Voyage, a Captain call'd *Aquipaguetin*, who afterwards

wards adopted me for his Son, as we ſhall ſee anon, thought it adviſable to halt about Noon in a fine large Meadow, ſituate on the Weſt of the River *Meſchaſipi*. This Chief had kill'd a large fat Bear, to which he invited the Principal Captains of the Warriours. After the Repaſt, the Savages having all of them certain Marks in the Face, and their Bodies painted with the Figure of ſome Beaſt, ſuch as every one fancy'd beſt, their Hair being alſo annointed with the Oil of Bears, and ſtuck all over with red and white Feathers, and their Heads cover'd with the Down of Birds, began to dance with their Hands all upon their Hip, and ſtriking the the Soles of their Feet with that violence againſt the Earth, that the very Marks appear'd. During the Dance, one of the Sons of the Maſter of the Ceremonies, made 'em all ſmoak in the Pipe of War, himſelf ſhedding abundance of Tears during the whole Action. And the Father, who marſhall'd the whole melancholy Scene, accompany'd him with a Voice ſo lamentable and broken, with ſo many riſing Sighs, as were capable of melting the moſt obdurate Heart, bathing himſelf all the while in his Tears: Sometimes would he addreſs himſelf to the Warriour, ſometimes to me, laying his Hands on my Head, as he did alſo on my Mens. Sometimes would he lift up his Eyes to Heaven, repeating the word *Louis*, which in their Speech ſignifies the Sun, appealing to him for Juſtice on the Murderers of his Son, and hoping to engage his Followers to avenge his Death.

As for us, as far as we could judge, all this Grimace boded us no good: and indeed we afterwards underſtood, that this Barbarian meant nothing leſs than our Deſtruction by it, as well now as at other times. But finding the oppoſition he was like to meet with from the other Chiefs, who were of a contrary Opinion, he was content to ſuffer us to reembark, reſolving however to make uſe of ſome other

ther Stratagem to get into his own hands by little and little the reſt of our Things. To take them from us openly by force, though he eaſily could he durſt not, for fear of thoſe of his own Nation, who for ſuch an Action would have accus'd him of a Baſeneſs of Spirit, which even the moſt barbarous diſdain.

CHAP. XLIX.

What Tricks and Artifices were uſed by Aquipaguetin *to cheat us handſomely of our Goods, with many other Accidents that happen'd in our Voyage.*

BY what has been ſaid, it plainly appears, that *Aquipaguetin* was a crafty deſigning Knave. He had with him the Bones of one of his deceas'd Friends, which he kept very choicely in the Skin of a Beaſt, adorned with ſeveral red and black Liſts of a Porcupine's. He would be from time to time aſſembling his Followers to make them ſmoak; and then would he ſend for us one after another, and oblige us to cover the Bones of their Deceas'd with ſome of our *European* Merchandiſe, in order to dry up the Tears which he had ſhed for him and his Son, who had been kill'd by the *Miami's*.

To appeaſe the crafty old Savage, we ſtrewed on the Bones of the Deceas'd ſeveral Pieces of *Martinico*-Tobacco, Hatchets, Knives, Beads, and ſome Bracelets of black and white Porcelain. Thus you ſee how we were drain'd by ſuch Methods and Pretences, as we could not eaſily gainſay. He gave us to underſtand, that what he had thus demanded of us, was not for himſelf but the Dead, and to give the Warriours that he brought with him; and indeed he diſtributed amongſt them whatever he took from us. He would have had us underſtood by this, That

as

as a Captain he would take nothing himſelf but what we ſhould freely preſent him with.

All this while we lay at the point of the *Lake of Tears*; we nam'd it ſo by reaſon of the Tears which this Chief did ſhed here every Night. When he was weary of Weeping, he made one of his Sons come and ſupply his Place. His deſign in this was to excite the Compaſſion of the Warriorrs, and to prevail with them to kill us, and after that to purſue their Enemies; and ſo revenge the Death of his Son which he had loſt.

Sometimes they ſent the ſwifteſt amongſt them by Land to ſeek for prey, who would drive whole Droves of wild Bulls before them, and force them to ſwim the River. Of theſe they ſometimes kill'd forty or fifty, but took only the Tongues, and ſome other of the beſt Pieces: The reſt they left, not to burden themſelves, that they might make the more haſt home.

'Tis true, we had Proviſions plenty and good; but then we had neither Bread nor Wine, nor Salt, nor indeed any thing elſe to ſeaſon it; and this laſted during the Four laſt Years of the almoſt Twelve that I liv'd in *America*. In our laſt Voyage, we liv'd much after the ſame manner, ſometimes abounding, and at other times again reduc'd to the laſt Extremity; ſo that we have not eat a bit for four and twenty hours together, and ſometimes longer. The reaſon is, becauſe in ſmall Canou's of Bark, one can ſtow but little: So that what ever precaution a Man may uſe, he will often find himſelf deſtitute of all things neceſſary for Life. Did the Religious of *Europe* undergo half the Fatigue, or did they but obſerve the Faſts that we have kept for ſo long a time together in *America*, there would need no Proofs to Canonize them. But then it muſt be own'd, that what deſtroys the Merits of our Faſts, was, that if we did ſuffer on ſuch occaſions, or our Sufferings proceeded not from our Choice; but, as the Proverbial Saying is, *our Vertue was our Neceſſity.*

CHAP.

CHAP. L.

The Elders weep for us during the Night. New Outrages done us by Aquipaguetin. *The manner how the Savages make Fire by Friction.*

MAny Nights together ſome or other of the Elders came and wept over us. They rubb'd our Arms and Bodies very often with their Hands, which they afterwards laid on our Heads. Theſe Tears gave us many uneaſie Thoughts; 'twas impoſſible to ſleep for them; and yet we had need enough of Reſt, after the great Fatigues of the Day. Nor was I eaſier by Day: I knew not what to think; ſometimes I fanſied that they bewail'd us, as knowing ſome of the Warriors had reſolv'd to kill us; and other times again I flatter'd my ſelf, that their Tears were the effect of their Compaſſion, for the evil Treatment they made us undergo. However it were, I am ſure theſe Tears affected me more than thoſe that ſhed them.

About this time, *Aquipaguetin* had another opportunity of perſecuting us afreſh: He had ſo dexterouſly manag'd the Matter with the Warriors of his Party, that it was one Day impracticable for us to encamp near the young Chief *Narhetoha*, who protected us; but were forc'd to go and place our ſelves, with our Canou and Effects at the end of the Camp. Then it was that theſe Barbarians gave us to underſtand, That the aforeſaid Captain was fully reſolv'd to have our Heads. This oblig'd us to have recourſe once more to our Cheſt, and to take out twenty Knives and ſome Tobacco, which we diſtributed among them with an Air that ſufficiently teſtify'd our Diſcontent.

The unreaſonable Wretch look'd earneſtly upon his Followers one after another, as if he were in

doubt what to do, and consequently to demand their Advice, whether he ought to receive our Present or refuse it. But whilst we were inclining our Necks, and delivering him the Ax, the young Commander, who seem'd to be our Protector (and it may be really was) came and snatch'd us by the Arm, and all in a rage hurry'd us away to his Cabin. His Brother too taking up some Arrows, broke 'em in our sight, to assure us by that Action, that he would protect our Lives at the hazard of his own.

The next Day they left us alone in our Canou, without putting any of their Men a-board to assist us, as they had hitherto done: However, they kept all in the reer of us. After rowing four or five Leagues, another of their Captains came up to us, and made us land. As soon as we got on shoar, he fell to cutting of Grass, which he made into three little Heaps, and bad us sit down upon them: Then he took a piece of Cedar, which was full of little round Holes, into one of which he thrust a Stick of a harder Substance than the Cedar, and began to rub it about pretty fast between the Palms of his Hands, till at length it took fire. The use he put it to was to light the Tobacco in his great Pipe; and after he had wept some time over us, and laid his Hands on our Heads, he made me smoak in a *Calumet*, or Pipe of Peace; and then acquainted us by Signs, that within sixteen Days we should be at home.

CHAP. LI.

Ceremonies us'd by the Savages when they share their Prisoners. Continuation of our Journey by Land.

HAving thus travell'd nineteen Days in our Canou by Water, we arriv'd at length within five or six Leagues of the Fall, to which we had formerly given

given the Name of St. *Anthony*, as we came to underſtand afterwards. Here the Barbarians order'd us to land in a Creek of the River *Meſchaſipi*; after which, they held an Aſſembly, to conſult what they were to do with us. In ſhort, they ſeparated, and gave us to three of their Chiefs, inſtead of three of their Sons which had been kill'd in the War: Then they ſeiz'd our Canou, and took away all our Equipage. The Canou they pull'd to pieces, for fear it might aſſiſt us to return to their Enemies: Their own they hid among the Alders, to uſe again when they ſhould have occaſion to hunt that way. So that tho' we might have gone conveniently enough quite up into their Country by Water, yet were we oblig'd, by their Conduct, to travel no leſs than ſixty Leagues a-foot.

Our ordinary Marches were from break of Day till ten at Night: And when we met with any Rivers, we ſwam them, themſelves (who for the moſt part are of an extraordinary ſize) carrying our Clothes and Equipage on their Heads, and the Canou-Men, who were leſs than me, upon their Shoulders, becauſe they could not ſwim. As I us'd to come out of the Water, which was often full of Ice, for we travell'd ſtill North, I was hardly able to ſtand upon my Legs. In theſe Parts the Froſts continue all Night even at this time of the Year; ſo that our Legs were all over Blood, being cut by the Ice, which we broke by degrees in our Paſſage as we waded o'er the Lakes and River. We never eat but once in four and twenty Hours, and then nothing but a few Scraps of Meat dry'd in Smoak after their Faſhion, which they afforded us with abundance of regret.

I was ſo weak that I often laid me down, reſolving rather to die than follow theſe Savages any farther, who travell'd at a rate ſo extraordinary, as far ſurpaſſes the Strength of any *European*. However, to

haſten us, they ſometimes ſet fire to the dry Graſs in the Meadows through which we paſs'd; ſo that our Choice was march or burn. I had a Hat which I had taken with me, to fence me from the Sun during the Heats of the Summer. This would often fall from my Head into the Fire, becauſe it was not over-fit, and the Fire ſo very near. The Barbarians would ſnatch it out again, and lend me a hand to ſave me from the Flames, which they had kindled; as well as to haſten our March, as I have ſaid, as to give notice to their People of their return. I muſt here acknowledge, That had it not been for *du Gay*, who did all he could to encourage me, through the whole Courſe of this tireſome March, I had certainly ſunk under the Fatigues of it, having neither Spirits nor Strength left to ſupport me.

CHAP. LII.

A great Conteſt ariſes among the Savages, about dividing our Merchandiſe and Equipage; as alſo my Sacerdotal Ornaments and little Cheſt.

AFter having travell'd about ſixty Leagues a-foot, and undergone all the Fatigues of Hunger, Thirſt, and Cold, beſides a thouſand Outrages daily done us in our Perſons, after we had march'd Night and Day without ceaſing, wading through Lakes and Rivers, and ſometimes ſwam. As we now began to approach the Habitations of the Barbarians, which are ſituated in Moraſſes inacceſſible to their Enemies, they thought it a proper time to divide the Merchandiſe which they had taken from us. Here they had like to have fallen out and cut one another's Throats, about the Roll of *Martinico*-Tobacco, which might ſtill weigh about fifty Pound. Theſe People

People value this Commodity far beyond what we do Silver or Gold. They have very good of their own growth; but this was ſo well dreſs'd, and made up into ſuch beautiful Rings, that they were perfectly charm'd with it. The moſt reaſonable amongſt them made us underſtand by Signs, that they would give their Canou-Men ſeveral Caſtor-Skins in return for what they had taken: But others looking upon us as Slaves, becauſe they ſaid we had furniſh'd Arms to their Enemies, maintain'd that they were no ways oblig'd to make any return for the Things they had taken.

The reaſon why they divided the Spoil here, was, becauſe this Band was compos'd of two or three different People: So that thoſe that liv'd at a diſtance, were apprehenſive leſt the others, who were juſt at home, might detain all the Merchandiſe which they had taken, in the firſt Villages they ſhould come at; and therefore were reſolv'd to play a ſure Game, and have their Share aforehand. Nor had they any greater Reſpect for what belong'd to me, than for the Merchandiſe which they took from the Canoumen; for they ſeiz'd my Brocard Chaſuble, and all the Ornaments of my portable Chapel, except the Chalice, which they durſt not touch. They obſerv'd that this Veſſel, which was of Silver gilt, caſt a glittering Light, ſo that as often as they chanc'd to look towards it, they would ſhut their Eyes: The Reaſon was, as we underſtood afterwards, becauſe they believ'd it to be a Spirit which would kill them. I had a little Cheſt, which I kept lock'd; they made me underſtand by Signs, That if I did not open it, or break the Lock, they would do it for me, againſt ſome ſharp Stones which they ſhew'd me. The Reaſon why they threatned me thus, was, becauſe they had not been able to open it all the way, though they attempted it ſeveral times, to ſee what was in it. Theſe People underſtand nothing of Locks and

Keys: Beſides, their Deſign was not to cumber themſelves with the Box it ſelf, but only to take out the Things that were in it. After I had open'd it, and they ſaw there was little or nothing in it but Books and Papers, they left it me untouch'd.

CHAP. LIII.

The Troop approaches the Village. A Grand Conſult among the Savages, whether they ſhould kill us, or ſave and adopt us for their Sons. The Reception which we had from them; and the uſe they made of my Chaſuble.

AFter five hard Days travel, without ſo much as reſting, except a little by Night in the open Air, we perceiv'd at laſt abundance of Women and Children coming out to meet our little Army: All the Elders of the Nation were aſſembled upon this Occaſion. We obſerv'd ſeveral Cabins, near the Poſts of which lay ſeveral Truſſes of Straw and dry'd Weeds, where theſe Barbarians are wont to faſten and burn the Slaves which they bring home with them from their Wars. Here they order'd *Picard du Gay* to ſing, who all the time rattled a hollow Gourd full of little round Stones, which he held in his Hand. I obſerv'd moreover, that his Hair and Face were painted with different Colours, and that they had faſtned a Tuft of white Feathers to his Head. Theſe Ceremonies renew'd our Fears; and we thought we had more reaſon than ever to believe, that they had ſtill a Deſign to put us to death. Nor were our Fears groundleſs, ſince theſe, with many others, are the Ceremonies which they uſe at the burning of their Enemies.

The worſt was, we could not make our ſelves be underſtood. However, after many Vows and ſecret Prayers which we offer'd up to God on this Occaſion, the

the Barbarians at laſt gave us ſome wild Oats to eat, of which I have ſpoken elſe where. They gave them us in great Diſhes made of Birch-trees; and the Savage Women ſeaſon'd them with *Bluez*. This is a ſort of Black Grain, which they dry in the Sun in the Summer, and are as good as Corrans: The *Dutch* call them *Clake-beſien*.

All the while the Feaſt laſted, which was the beſt Meal that we had made ever ſince we had been taken, there was a high Diſpute between *Aquipaguetin* and the others, about the Diſtribution they were to make of the two Canou-men and my ſelf. At laſt *Aquipaguetin*, as Head of the Party, carry'd it; who turning from one of the principal Captains towards me, preſented me to ſmoak in his *Calumet* of Peace, receiving from me at the ſame time that which we had brought, as a certain Pledge of the Union which was to be for the future 'twixt them and us. After this, he adopted me for his Son, in the room of him that he had loſt in the War.

Cnarhetoba and another Captain did the ſame by the two Canou-men. This Seperation was very grievous to us, tho ſomewhat allay'd bythe Satisfaction we had to find our Lives were ſafe. *Du Gay* took me aſide to confeſs him, being ſenſible of the uncertain Condition his Life was in, amongſt ſo barbarous a People. This oblig'd him to embrace me very heartily, and to beg my Pardon for what was paſt, having firſt made the ſame Requeſt to God. I ſhould have been overjoy'd to have ſeen *Michael Ako* as well diſpoſed: However, I did not omit to ſhew both the one and the other all the Marks of a moſt tender Affection.

In ſhort, the Savages having parted us, led us away each to his own Village. Our Way lay over a Moras, where we march'd half way the Leg in Water for a League together, at the end of which we were met by five of *Aquipaguetin*'s Wives, who re-

ceiv'd me in one of the three Canou's of Bark which they had brought with them, and then carry'd me a little League farther into a ſmall Iſland, where their Cabins were.

CHAP. LIV.

The Author's Reception by the Relations of Aquipaguetin. *They make him ſweat to recover him of his Fatigues. The uſe they make of his Chaſuble and other Ornaments.*

I Arriv'd at this Place in the Month of *May*, 1680. the Day I cannot preciſely tell; for I was ſo haraſs'd by the Savages on the Way, that I could not make all the little Obſervations which otherwiſe I would have done: Beſides, there is ſome ſeven or eight Hours difference between the days and Nights of *Europe*, and thoſe of North-*America*, becauſe of the Retrogradation of the Sun. The Cape was always to weſt of us from *Rochel* to *Quebec*; but to South-weſt from thence, till we came to *Meſchaſipi*, which made a conſiderable Variation in the Needle.

This Variation was occaſion'd by the unconſtant motion of the Needle, which in certain Latitudes would encline to the North, or North-Eaſt; whereas in others 'twould turn from the North to the North-weſt. We never could be ſo well aſſur'd of our Computations in our long Voyages, as to know exactly the way our Canou's made in a Day, or what was the Variation of the Needle in each Latitude. But we found there were many Minutes of Variation, according to the Point the Wind was in. To ſay the Truth, able Men might have loſt the Memory of many things under the ſame Circumſtances with my ſelf.

At the entry of the Captain's Cabin who had adopted me, one of the Barbarians, who ſeem'd to be

be very old, preſented me with a great Pipe to ſmoak in, and weeping over me all the while with abundance of Tears, rubb'd both my Arms and my Head. This was to ſhew how concern'd he was to ſee me ſo haraſs'd and fatigu'd: And indeed I had often need enough of two Men to ſupport me when I was up, or raiſe me when I was down. There was a Bears-Skin before the Fire, upon which the youngeſt Boy of the Cabin caus'd me to lie down, and then with the Greaſe of wild Cats anointed my Thighs, Legs, and Soles of my Feet.

Aquipaguetin's Son, who call'd me Brother, had got my Brocard Chaſuble, and was ſtrutting up and down with it upon his naked back. He had wrapp'd up in it the Bones of a Man who had been very conſiderable amongſt them, for whoſe Memory they had ſtill a wonderful Reſpect. The Prieſt's Girdle which mas made of red and white Wooll, with two Loops at the end ſerv'd him to faſten it, whilſt he carry'd it up and down in Triumph, calling it *Louis Chinnen*, which ſignifies, as I ſince underſtand, the Robe of him, who is nam'd the *Sun*. After they had for ſome time us'd my Chaſuble as an Ornament to cover the Bones of their Dead, at the celebrating their moſt ſolemn Rites, they made a preſent of it to a People in Alliance with them, who liv'd 4 or 500 Leagues diſtant towards the Weſt, but were come in Embaſſie, and had danc'd the *Calumet*.

The day after my Arrival, *Aquipaguetin*, who was Head of a Great Family, put me on a Robe which was made of the Skins of the Bellies of wild Bulls: He gave me a ſecond, made of ten large Caſtor-Skins. Then he ſhew'd me ſix or ſeven of his Wives, (for Poligamy is in faſhion here;) he told them, as I afterwards underſtood, That they were to eſteem me as one of their Sons. After this, he ſet a Bark-diſh before me, in which were Bremes, and other white Fiſh, to regale me withal. He gave Orders to thoſe about him, to give

give me the Title that was due to the Rank which I was to hold amongst my new Kindred.

Farther; this new Father of mine observing that I could not well rise without two or three to help me, order'd a Stove to be made, into which he caus'd me to enter stark-naked with four Savages; who before they began to sweat, ty'd their *Prepuces* about with certain Strings made of the Bark of a white Wood. This Stove was cover'd with the Skins of wild Bulls, and in it they put Flints and other Stones red-hot. They order'd me by Signs to hold my Breath, time after time, as long as I could, which I did, as well as those that were with me. As for the Privy Parts, I had only a Handkerchief to cover me.

As soon as the Savages that were with me had let go their Breath which they did with a great force, *Aquipaguetin* began to sing with a loud and thundring Voice; the others seconded him; and laying their Hands on my Body, began to rub it, and at the same time to weep bitterly. I was like to fall into a Swoon, and so was forc'd to quit the Stove. At my coming out, I was scarce able to take up my Habit of St. *Francis* to cover me withal, I was so weak: However, they continu'd to make me sweat thrice a Week, which at last restor'd me to my pristine Vigour, so that I found my self as well as ever.

CHAP. LV.

The Author like to be famish'd. They admire his Compass, and an Iron Pot which he had. He makes a Dictionary, and instructs them in Points of Religion, in relation to Poligamy and Celibacy.

MAny a melancholy Day did I pass amongst these Savages. *Aquipaguetin*, who adopted me, gave me nothing to eat but a few wild Oats five or

six

ſix times a Week, and the Roes of dry'd Fiſh. All this Traſh the Women boil'd up in an Earthen Pot; Beſides, he ſent me into a Neighbouring Iſle, with his Wives, Children, and Servants, where I was to hough and dig with a Pick-axe and Shovel, which I had recover'd from thoſe that robb'd us. Here we planted Tobacco, and ſome *European* Pulſe, which I brought from thence, and were highly priz'd by *Aquipaguetin*.

This Man, to make himſelf the more conſiderable among thoſe of his Tribe, would often aſſemble the Ancients of his Village, and in preſence of them, ſend for my Compaſs, which I had ſtill by me. Upon my turning the Needle with a Key, he took occaſion to tell them, and with Truth enough, That by the Guidance of that Machine it was, that we *Europeans* travell'd the whole World. Nay, being an able Spokeſman, he poſſeſs'd them farther, That we were Spirits; and that we were capable of bringing things to paſs that were altogether out of their power. At the end of his Diſcourſe, which was very pathetick, all the Elders wept over me, admiring in me what they could not comprehend.

I had an Iron Pot about three foot round, which had the Figure of a Lion on it, which during our Voyage ſerv'd us to bake our Victuals in. This Veſſel was not ſo apt to break as our ordinary Kettles, which are more brittle; for which reaſon it was, not being likely to meet with Braziars to furniſh us with new upon occaſion, that we took this with us. This Pot the Barbarians durſt never ſo much as touch, without covering their Hands firſt in ſomething of Caſtor-Skin. And ſo great a Terrour was it to the Women, that they had it hung abroad upon the Bough of a Tree; for they durſt not come or ſleep in the Cabin when it was there.

We would have made a Preſent of it to ſome of their Chiefs; but none of them would either accept or make uſe of it, becauſe they thought that there

was

was a Spirit hid within, that would certainly kill them. Theſe People are all of them ſubject to the like Superſtition. Their Jugglers impoſe whatever they think fit upon their Belief. 'Twas ſome time I ſpent among 'em, before I could make my ſelf be underſtood. But Hunger beginningto preſs me hard, I ſet about making a Dictionary in their Tongue, the which I did by means of their Children, with whom I made my ſelf as familiar as poſſible, to inform my ſelf by their Prattle.

When once I had got the Word *Tahetchiaben*, which ſignifies in their Language, *How call you this?* I began to be ſoon able to talk of ſuch things as are moſt familiar. This difficulty was hard to ſurmount at firſt, becauſe there was no Interpreter that underſtood both Tongues. For Example; If I had a mind to know what *to run* was in their Tongue, I was forc'd to mend my pace, and indeed actually run from one end of the Cabin to t'other, till they underſtood what I meant, and had told me the Word; which I preſently ſet down in my Dictionary. The Principal of them obſerving the great Inclination I had to learn their Language, would often tell me, *Vatchiſon ęgagahe, Spirit, thou takeſt a great deal of Pains. Put Black to White.* One Day they told me the Names of all the Parts of a Man's Body. Howevever, I forbore ſetting down ſeveral immodeſt Terms, which theſe People ſcruple not to uſe every foot. Obſerving it, they would often cry *ęgagahe, ęgagahe; Spirit, Spirit, ſet down that Word as well as the reſt.*

Thus would they divert themſelves with me, and often ſay to one another, *When we ask Father* Louis *any thing*, (for they had heard our Canou-Men call me ſo) *he does not anſwer us. But when he has lookt upon the White*, (for they have no word for Paper) *he then talks, and makes us underſtand his Thoughts. This White thing*, would they add, *muſt needs be a Spirit, which teaches him to underſtand all we ſay.* Hence they concluded, that neither of the Canou-Men had ſo much Wit

as

as my ſelf, becauſe they could not *work upon that which was White.* So that this Qualification in me, made them fondly imagine that I could do any thing elſe.

One Day, ſeeing the Rain fall in ſuch abundance, that they fear'd 'twould ſpoil their hunting, they order'd me to bid it ceaſe. I told them, pointing with my Finger to the Clouds, *That He, who was the Great Captain of Heaven, was the ſole Maſter of the Rain and Sunſhine; That He was the Great Diſpoſer of all the Events that happen to Mortals, or the Univerſe in general; That what they bid me do, depended not on me, but the Firſt Mover, who had ſent me thither, to teach them to acknowledge him for their Creator and Redeemer.*

Obſerving me diſtinguiſh'd from the Canou-Men by my Habit, and having no Notion of *Celibacy*, they would often aſk what Age I was, and what Wives and Children I had. Their way of reck'ning their Years is by Winters. Theſe Wretches, void of Light and Inſtruction, were ſtrangely ſurpriz'd at the Anſwer I made them. I told them, pointing to the two Canou-Men, whom I was come three Leages to viſit, *That with us, one Man might marry but one Wife, and that nothing cou'd ſeparate him again from that One, but Death: That for my ſelf, I had promis'd the Great Maſter of Life never to marry any; but to come and dwell amongſt them, and inſtruct them in the Commands of the Great Maſter of Heaven and Earth, and to live poorly amongſt them, far from my own Country, where all good Things did abound.*

'Tis true, ſays one of them, *here is little or no Hunting in theſe Parts, and thou ſuffereſt much: But have but patience till Summer, we ſhall then go into the hot Countries, where we ſhall kill Bulls enough, and then thou wilt make thy ſelf ſufficient amends for the time thou haſt ſpent here.* I had been well content, had they let me eat as their Children did; but they hid the Victuals from me, and would riſe to eat in the Night, when I knew nothing of it. And although Women have uſually more Compaſſion than Men, yet they kept the little Fiſh that they had,

had, all for their Children. They conſider'd me as a Slave whom their Warriours had taken in their Enemy's Country; and preferr'd the Lives of their Children before any Conſideration they had for me; as indeed it was but reaſonable they ſhou'd.

However, ſome of the Elders would come often, and mourn over me in a very doleful manner. One wou'd call me *Grandſon*, another *Nephew*; and all would ſay to me, *I am ſtrangely afflicted to ſee thee ſo long without eating, and to underſtand thou haſt been ſo ill treated in thy Journey. Thoſe were young Warriors without Courage, who wou'd have kill'd thee, and who robb'd thee of what thou hadſt. If thou wou'dſt have had Robes of Caſtors, or wild Bulls, to dry thy Tears, we wou'd have given 'em thee; but thou wouldſt accept of nothing we have preſented thee.*

CHAP. LVI.

The moſt conſiderable Captain of the Iſſati *and* Nadoueſſi-ans *upbraid thoſe that took us. The Author Baptizes the Daughter of* Mameniſi.

O*Vaſicoude*, that is to ſay, *The Pierc'd Pine*, the wiſeſt and moſt conſiderable of all the Chiefs of the *Iſſati* and *Nadoueſſians*, made it publickly appear, that he was highly incens'd againſt the Warriors that had us'd us ſo very ill. He ſaid once in a full Council, That thoſe who had robb'd us of our Things, were to be compar'd to famiſh'd Dogs, which having ſtole a piece of Fleſh out of a Diſh, ſneak away with it when they have done: That they that had acted much after the ſame rate in regard of us, ought to be look'd upon as Dogs, who cou'd put ſuch unworthy Affronts upon Men, who brought them Iron, and other Merchandizes, which they had no knowledge of, though they were found to be ſo uſeful: That for Himſelf, he

ſhou'd

ſhou'd one Day have an opportunity of being reveng'd on him, who had been Author of all our Sufferings. This Reprimand was worthy the Character of a Perſon of *Ouaſicoude*'s Authority: And the Generoſity of the Action redounded ſince to the Benefit of the whole Nation, as we ſhall ſee anon.

Going one Day, as I often did, to viſit the Cabins, I found the Infant-Child of one call'd *Mamenſi*, very ſick. Having a little examin'd the Symptoms of its Diſtemper, I found the Child paſt hopes of Recovery. I deſir'd our two Canou-Men to give me their Opinions, telling them, I thought my ſelf oblig'd in Conſcience to Baptize it.. *Michael Ako* cou'd not be prevail'd with to enter the Cabin where the Infant lay. He ſaid in Excuſe, That I could not forget what a Riſque we had run once already, of being murder'd by the Savages through my Obſtinacy, in perſiſting to ſay my Breviary; whence 'twas to be fear'd, that what I was now going to do, might expoſe us again to the ſame Danger.

The Wretch had rather comply with certain Superſtitions of the Barbarians, than aſſiſt me in ſo pious a Deſign. Being follow'd then by none but *Picard du Gay*, who aſſiſted as God-father, or rather Witneſs of the Baptiſm, I chriſten'd the Child, and nam'd it *Antonetta*, from St. *Anthony* of *Padua*; and the rather, becauſe the ſaid *Peter du Gay*'s Name was *Anthony Anguelle*, Native of *Amiens*, and Nephew of Monſieur *du Conroi*, Proctor-General of the *Premonſtres*, and ſince Abbot of *Beaulieu*, to whom I preſented him ſafe at our Return from *Canada*. But to proceed; for want of more proper Utenſils, I took a wooden Diſh, and having put ſome common ordinary Water into it, ſprinkled it upon the Head of the little Savage, pronouncing the following Words, *Creature of God, I baptize thee in the Name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghoſt.* Then I took half my Altar-Cloth, which I had ſnatch'd out of the Hands

Hands of a Savage, who had ſtole it from me, and ſpread it over the Body of the Infant.

The Baptiſm was accompany'd with no other Ceremony, becauſe I was no longer in a Condition to ſay Maſs, my Sacerdotal Robes being all taken from me. I believ'd the Linen could not ſerve to a more proper End than a Winding-Sheet to the firſt Infant of the Country, that had the Happineſs to be baptized. I know not how far its Pains might be aſſwag'd by Virtue of the Linen, or what Alterations it might feel. I am ſure I ſaw it laughing the next Day in its Mother's Arms, who believ'd I had cur'd her Child. However it dy'd ſome time after, which affected me more with Joy than Grief.

Had this Child recover'd, 'twas much to be fear'd 'twou'd have trod in the ſteps of its Fore-fathers, and been over-grown with their Infamous Superſtitions, for want of a Preacher to inſtruct it. For indeed, if thoſe of its Nation dwelling in Darkneſs and Ignorance, *continue to ſin without Law, they ſhall alſo periſh without Law*, as we are told by the Apoſtle. Upon theſe Conſiderations I was glad it had pleas'd God to take this little Chriſtian out of the World, leſt it might have fall'n into Temptations, had it recover'd, which might have engag'd it in Error and Superſtition. I have often attributed my Preſervation amidſt the greateſt Dangers which I have ſince run, to the Care I took for its Baptiſm.

CHAP. LVII.

An Embaſſy ſent to the Iſſati *by the Savages that inhabit to the Weſt of them. Whence it appears that there is no ſuch thing as the Streights of* Anian; *and that* Japan *is on the ſame Continent as* Louiſiana.

UNder the Reign of the Emperour *Charles* V. the Fathers Recluſe of our Order were the firſt that were

were ſent by his Command into *New-Mexico*; ſince which time there have been of them beyond the *Vermilian-Sea*. The moſt remarkable Epoque of the Streights of *Anian*, commences from the time of that moſt excellent *Religious* of our Order, *Martin de Valencia*, who was the Firſt Biſhop of the great City of *Mexico*. We have ſpoke of him elſewhere.

In proceſs of time 'twas believ'd that the ſaid Streights were only imaginary: Many Perſons noted for great Learning, are of this Opinion; and to evince the Truth of it, I will here ſubjoin one evident Proof, to thoſe which are already produc'd by them: and it is this. During my ſtay among the *Iſſati* and *Nadouſſians*, there arriv'd four Savages in Embaſſie to theſe People. They had come above five hundred Leagues from the Weſt; and told us by the Interpreters of the *Iſſati*, that they were four Moons upon the Way; for ſo it is they call their Months. They added, that their Country was to the Weſt, and that we lay to the Eaſt in reſpect of them; that they had march'd the whole time without reſting, except to ſleep, or kill Game for their Subſiſtence. They aſſur'd us there was no ſuch thing as the Streights of *Anian*; and that in their whole Journey they had neither met with, nor paſſed over any *Great Lake*; by which Phraſe they always mean the Sea, nor any Arm of it.

They farther inform'd us, That the Nation of the *Aſſeni-poulaes*, whoſe Lake is down in the Map, and who lie North-Eaſt of the *Iſſati*, was not above ſix or ſeven Days Journey from us: That none of the Nations within their Knowledge, who lie to the Weſt and North-Weſt of them, had any great Lake about their Countries, which were very large, but only Rivers, which coming from the North, run croſs the Countries of their Neighbouring Nations, which border on their Confines on the ſide of the Great Lake, which in the Language of the Savages

is the ſame as Sea: That Spirits, and Pigmies, or Men of little Stature, did inhabit there, as they had been inform'd by the People that liv'd farther up than themſelves; and that all the Nations which lie beyond their Country, and thoſe which are next to them, do dwell in Meadows and large Fields, where are many wild Bulls and Caſtors, which are greyer than thoſe of the North, and have their Coat more inclining to Black; with many other wild Beaſts, which yield very fine Furrs.

The four Savages of the ſaid Embaſſy aſſur'd us farther, that there were very few Foreſts in the Countries through which they paſs'd in their way hither; inſomuch that now and then they were ſo put to it for Fuel, that they were forced to make Fires of Bull's Dung, to boil their Victuals with in Earthen-Pots, which they make uſe of, as neither having, nor knowing of any better.

All theſe Circumſtances which I have here inſerted, make it appear, that there is no ſuch thing as the Streights of *Anian*, as we uſually ſee them ſet down in Maps. To aſſert the Truth of what I ſay, I here frankly offer my ſelf to return into theſe Parts, with ſuch Ships as His *Britannick Majeſty*, or their *High and Mightineſſes*, the *States General*, ſhall think fit to ſend thither, in order to a full Diſcovery; in which I have no other Aim but the Glory of God, the Propagation of the Goſpel, Inſtruction of thoſe blind and ignorant People, who have been neglected for ſo many Ages, Improvement of Trade, which, the better 'tis underſtood, the more will it daily encreaſe between the Subjects of the King of *Spain* my Maſter, and thoſe of His *Britannick Majeſty* and *States General:* And laſtly, That Correſpondence and Union ſo neceſſary to be maintained among them, that they may live and labour together for the Common Good. I declare, I have no other Deſign; that my Intentions are ſincere and upright, and that my

my Deſire is to be ſerviceable to all *Europe*; Reſpect being firſt had, as I am in Duty bound, to my Natural Prince, the King of *England*, and the *States*; to whom I am ſingularly engaged, for the good Reception they were pleaſed to honour me with. Others perhaps would have uſed me ill, in return of all my Services, and the many dangerous Voyages I have made, with no other Deſign, but to contribute what in me lay, to the Glory of God, the Salvation of Souls, and the Good of all *Chriſtendom*. I know well what I ſay. But to return: Whatever Efforts have been made for many Years paſt, by the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, the two Nations of the World, who are the greateſt Navigators, to find out a Paſſage to *China* and *Japan*, thro' the Frozen-Sea, they have not as yet been able to effect it. But by the help of my Diſcovery, and the Aſſiſtance of God, I doubt not to let all *Europe* ſee that a Paſſage may ſtill be found thither, and that an eaſie one too. For Example; One may be tranſported into the *Pacifick-Sea* by Rivers, which are large, and capable of carrying great Veſſels, and from thence 'tis eaſie to go to *China* and *Japan*, without croſſing the Equinoctial Line. Thoſe that read my Relation, and will never ſo little examine the *Maps* which are annext to it, will ſoon acknowledge the Truth of what I ſay.

CHAP. LVIII.

The Iſſati *aſſemble to hunt the Wild-Bull. Refuſal of the two Canow-Men to take the Author into their Canow, in order to go down the River of* St. Francis.

AFter three Months or thereabouts, ſpent very ill among the *Iſſati* and *Nadoueſſians*, theſe Nations aſſembl'd to hunt the Wild-Bull; and their Captains having aſſign'd them their Stations, that they might

not fall in with one another, they ſeparated themſelves into many Bands.

Aquipaguetin, the Chief, that had adopted me for his Son, wou'd have carry'd me to the Weſt with about 200 Families. But remembring the Reproaches which the great Captain *Ouaſicoude* had made him, upon the Score of our ill uſage, I was apprehenſive leſt he ſhould lay hold of this Opportunity to avenge himſelf on me. I told him therefore, I expected ſome Spirits, which in their Language is as much as to ſay *Europeans*, at the River *Ouiſconſin*, which diſcharges it ſelf into the River *Meſchaſipi*; that according to the Promiſe made me by the Sieur *de la Salle*, they would meet me there with Iron, and other Commodities, which as yet they were unacquainted with; and that if he would think of turning his Expedition that way, I ſhould be very glad to accompany him. He heard my Propoſal, and was willing to embrace it; but thoſe of his Band would not let him.

In the beginning of *July*, 1680. we began to deſcend towards the South, with the great Captain *Ouaſicode*, and about 80 Cabins, containing 130 Families and 250 Warriors. The Savages who had nothing but old Canou's, could not make me room; ſo that they went four Days Journey lower, to get ſome Birchen-Bark, to make more new ones. I made a hole in the Ground, in which I hid my gilt Chalice, with my Books and Papers, till we ſhould return from hunting; and took nothing with me but my Breviary, that I might not cumber my ſelf.

I Placed my ſelf upon the Brink of the Lake which forms the River of *St. Francis*, where I held out my Hands to the Canou Men, as they paſt very ſwiftly by, to deſire them to take me in. Our two *Europeans* were in a Canou, which had been given them by the Savages. However, I could not prevail with them to receive me. *Michael Ako* told me very brutiſhly,

brutiſhly, he had carry'd me long enough. This rough and unhandſome Anſwer made me very melancholy, when I ſaw my ſelf forſaken by thoſe of my own Country and Religion, whom I had always endeavoured to oblige, as themſelves had often acknowledged before Perſons of the firſt Quality, where I was us'd to be received with all the Marks of Diſtinction, while themelves were ſuffer'd to ſtand and cool their Heels at the Door.

But God, who of his Mercy never forſook me throughout all my Adventures, inſpired two of the Savages with ſo much Compaſſion, as to take me with them into their Canon, tho' it were leſs than that of the *Europeans*. Here I was continually employed in laving out Water, which ſoaked in again as faſt as 'twas thrown out, through abundance of little Chinks. This Work was uneaſie enough; beſides that, I could not keep my ſelf from being throughly wet. However, 'twas neceſſary to have Patience. It might have been properly ſaid of this little Veſſel, that when a Man was in it, he was in his Coffin; ſo crazy was it, and ready to break. This ſort of Cano's ſeldom weigh above 50 Pounds, and the leaſt Motion of the Body overſets them, at leaſt if you have not been long acquainted with this ſort of Navigation.

At Evening when we landed, *Picard* began to excuſe himſelf, pretending their Canow was a very rotten one, that it would certainly have burſt, had we been all three in it, and that we muſt needs have been left by the way. Notwithſtanding theſe Excuſes, I told them, that being Chriſtians, they had not done well to uſe me as they did, eſpecially conſidering among whom we were: That they had forſaken me very unſeaſonably, having left me all alone at above 800 Leagues diſtance from *Canada*, allowing for the Reaches we were to make, before we could get thither: That if they had received any good Uſage from the Savages, 'twas owing to my Ingenuity more than

their own, having been capable of letting ſeveral of them Blood, and otherwiſe aſſiſting 'em in their Sickneſs by my Orvietan, and ſome other Medicines which I carefully kept by me.

To this I added, that by the ſame means I had cur'd others of them that had been bitten by Rattle-Snakes, of which I ſhall ſpeak in my *Second Volume*. That I ſhav'd the Crowns of their Children's Heads, (on which they wear the Hair till eighteen or twenty) which was no ſmall matter, conſidering they could not do it themſelves, without putting them to great Pain, by burning off the Hair with flat Stones, which they heat red-hot in the Fire: That hitherto indeed, I had made but little advance in order to their Salvation, by reaſon of their natural Stupidity; but that the beſt way to take the Soul was to begin with the Body: That, in ſhort, I had gain'd their Friendſhip by my Services, and that they would have certainly kill'd us at the time they uſed us ſo ill, but that they knew I had certain Remedies about me proper to reſtore Health to the Sick; which they thought was a Treaſure never to be valued as it ought.

None was with me during this Harangue, but *Picard du Gay*, who, as he was going to his Cabin, deſir'd me to pardon him. But the great Captain *Ouaſicoude* having heard of this barbarous Action of the two Canow-Men, order'd them to appear before the Council, and told them, that for the future he would take care to remove me out of the reach, not only of *Aquipaguetin*, who had ſo often attempted my Life and yet adopted me for his Son, but likwiſe from their Company, who, like two Villains, as they were, had ſo baſely deſerted me. Had I not luckily bethought my ſelf to break three Arrows in the preſence of this brave Chief, the Canow-Men being yet by, he had infallibly caus'd them to have been put to death that very Minute. I ſhall never forget the Humanity of this great Captain, who treated me ſo favoura-

favourably on all Occaſions. The two Canow-men were ſurpriz'd at what had happen'd, and promis'd me an entire Obedience for the future.

CHAP. LIX.

The Savages halt above the Fall of St. Anthony *of* Padna. *They are ſtreighten'd for Proviſions. The Author, with* Picard, *returns to the River* Ouiſconſin. *The Adventures of the Voyage.*

FOur Days after our Departure to hunt the wild Bulls, the Barbarians made a Halt ſome eight Leagues above the Fall of *St. Anthony* of *Padua*, upon an Eminence, over againſt the River of *St. Francis*. The Savage Women prepared little Docks to build the new Canou's in, againſt the return of thoſe who were gone for Bark. The Youth in the mean time went out to hunt the Stag, the wild Goat and the Caſtor; but with ſo little Succeſs, that the Prey they brought home was ſo diſproportionable to the Number that were to feed on it, that we had hardly every one a Mouthful. Happy the Man that once in twenty four Hours could get ſo much as a Sup of Broath.

This put *Picard* and my ſelf upon hunting after Gooſeberries, and other wild Fruits, which often did us more harm than good. And I am confident, that had it not been for my Orvietan-Powder, which in a great meaſure corrected the bad Nutriment which we took in, our Lives had been in great Danger. This extream Want, made us take a Reſolution, upon *Michael Ako*'s refuſing to accompany us, to venture our ſelves in a little ſorry Canou as far as the River *Ouiſconſin*, which was at no leſs diſtance from us than 130 Leagues, to ſee if the Sieur *de Salle* had kept his Word with us: For he had promiſed us poſitively

ſitively to ſend Men with Powder, and Lead, and other Merchandizes, to the place which I have already mentioned: And of this he aſſured me more than once, before his departure from the *Illinois*.

The Savages would never have ſuffered us to have made this Voyage, without one of the three being left with them: And my ſelf was the Man they pitched upon to ſtay, by the Advice of the great Captain *Ouaſicoude*, whilſt the two Canou-Men were at liberty to proceed on their Voyage. But *Michael Ako*, who was apprehenſive of the many Hardſhips he was like to meet with in this Expedition, could never be prevail'd upon to conſent to it: So that ſeeing he began to reliſh the Barbarians way of living, I deſir'd their Chief, that I might have leave to accompany *Picard* in his ſtead; who accordingly granted my Requeſt.

Our whole Equipage conſiſted of fifteen or twenty Charges of Powder, a Fuſil, a little ſorry Earthen Pot, which the Barbarians gave us, a Knife between us both, and a Garment of Caſtor. Thus were we equipt for a Voyage of 250 Leagues; but our greateſt Truſt was in Providence. As we were carrying our little Canou to the Fall of St. *Anthony* of *Padua*, we perceived five or ſix Savages, who were got there before us. One of them was was got up into an Oak over againſt the great Fall of Water, where he was weeping moſt bitterly, having faſtened to one of the Branches of the Tree, a Robe of Caſtor, which was white within-ſide, and garniſhed with Porcupine.

The poor Wretch had offered it in Sacrifice to the Fall; which, indeed, of it ſelf is terrible, and hath ſomething in it very aſtoniſhing: However, it doth not come near that of *Niagara*. I could hear him ſay, as he was addreſſing himſelf to the Caſcade, with Tears in his Eyes; *Thou art a Spirit grant that Thoſe of my Nation may paſs here without any Diſaſter; That we may meet with a great many wild Bulls; and*

and that we may be ſo happy as to vanquiſh our Enemy, and take a great many Slaves, whom, when we have made them ſuffer according to their Merits, we will bring hither, and ſlay in thy Preſence. The Meſſenacks ('tis ſo they call the Nation of the *Outtouagimi's) have ſlain ſome of our Kindred: Grant we may be able to revenge our ſelves upon 'em for that Affront.*

The laſt part of his Requeſt hapned to be fulfilled ſooner, I believe, than he expected: For as they returned from hunting the wild Bulls, they attacked their Enemy, killed a good many of them, and carried off ſeveral Slaves, whom they put to death before the Fall, after the moſt barbarous and inhumane manner in the World, as we ſhall ſee in the *Second Volume.* Now if after ſuch a barbarous Ceremony as I have been deſcribing, it happen but once that the Succeſs anſwers the Requeſt, 'tis ſufficient to render them obſtinate in their ſuperſtitious Cuſtom, though it miſcarry a hundred times for once that it hits. As for the Caſtor-Robe, which was thus offered as a ſort of Sacrifice, one of our *Europeans* made bold with it at his return, and would have been glad of having more frequent Opportunities of profiting by their Devotions.

When we had got about a League below the Fall, *Picard* miſs'd his Powder-Horn, and remembring he had left it there, was forced to go back and fetch it. At his return I ſhewed him a huge Serpent, as big as a Man's Leg, and ſeven or eight Foot long. She was working her ſelf inſenſibly up a ſteep craggy Rock, to get at the Swallows Neſts which are there in great Numbers: And at the Bottom of the Mountain we ſaw the Feathers of thoſe ſhe had already devoured. We pelted her ſo long with Stones, till at length ſhe fell into the River. Her Tongue which was in form of a Lance, was of an extraordinary length. Her Hiſs might be heard a great way, and the Noiſe of it ſeized us with Horror. Poor *Picard* dreamt

dreamt of her at Night, and was in a great Agony all the while. He told me, I had dome him a ſenſible Kindneſs in waking him; for though he was a Man intrepid enough, yet he was all in a ſweat with the fright of his Dream. I have likewiſe my ſelf been often diſturbed in my Sleep with the Image of her; ſo great an Impreſſion did the ſight of this Monſter make upon our Spirits.

As we were falling down the River *Meſchaſipi* with extraordinary Swiftneſs, becauſe the Current is very rapid in this place, by reaſon 'tis ſo near the Fall, we found ſome of the Savages of our Band, in the Iſlands of the River, where they had ſet up their Cabins, and were well provided with Bulls Fleſh. They offered us very freely of what they had. But about two Hours after our landing, we thought we ſhould have been all murdered: Fifteen or ſixteen Savages came into the middle of the Place where we were, with their great Clubs in their Hands. The firſt thing they did was to over-ſet the Cabin of thoſe that had invited us. Then they took away all their Victuals, and what Bears-Oil they could find in their Bladders, or elſewhere, with which they rubbed themſelves all over from Head to Foot.

We took them at firſt for Enemies; and *Picard* was very near ſticking the firſt that came in with his Sword. At the firſt ſurprize, I began to lay hold of the two Pocket-Piſtols that *du Gay* had left me; but by good luck I contained my ſelf, or otherwiſe, without doubt, there had been an end of us; for their Companions would not have failed to have revenged upon us the Death of thoſe we had kill'd.

We knew not what theſe Savages were at firſt; but it appear'd they were ſome of thoſe that we had left above at the Fall of St. *Anthony*. One of them, who called himſelf my Uncle, told me, that thoſe who had given us Victuals, had done baſely to go and foreſtal the others in the Chaſe; and that

that according to the Laws and Cuſtoms of their Country, 'twas lawful for them to plunder them, ſince they had been the cauſe that the Bulls were all run away, before the Nation could get together, which was a great Injury to the Publick: For when they are all met, they make a great Slaughter among the Bulls; for they ſurround them ſo on every ſide, that 'tis impoſſible for them to eſcape.

CHAP. LX.

The Hunting of the Tortoiſe. The Author's Canou is carry'd off by a ſadden blaſt of Wind, which was like to have reduc'd him and his Companion to great Streights.

IN about threeſcore Leagues rowing, we had kill'd but one wild-Goat, which we did as ſhe was croſſing the River. The Heats were now grown ſo exceſſive, that our Proviſions would be ſpoil'd in twenty four Hours. This put us upon Hunting the Tortoiſe; but 'twas with much difficulty that we could take any; for being very quick of hearing, they would throw themſelves into the Water upon the leaſt noiſe. However, we took one at laſt, which was much larger than any we had ſeen: His Shell was thin, and the Fleſh very fat. Whilſt I was contriving to cut off his Head, he had like to have been before-hand with me, by ſnapping of my Finger with his Teeth, which are very ſharp.

Whilſt we were managing this Affair, we had halled our Canou a-ſhoar; but it ſeems a ſudden and violent Blaſt of Wind had carried her off again into the middle of the River. *Picard* was gone into the Meadows, to ſee if he could kill a wild Bull; ſo that I was left alone with the Canou. This obliged me to throw my Habit as faſt as I could over the Tor-

Tortoiſe, which I had turn'd, for fear he ſhould get away. I likewiſe laid ſeveral Stones upon my Clothes, the better to ſecure him. When I had done, I fell a ſwimming after our Canou, which went very faſt down the River, being carried by a very quick Stream, becauſe 'twas juſt at the turning of a Point. After I had recovered it with a great deal of difficulty, I durſt not get into it, for fear of being overſet, and wetting the Woollen Coverlet that was in it, which I us'd to ſleep on, and the reſt of our little Equipage: For which reaſon I was forc'd to puſh it ſometimes before me, and ſometimes tug it after me, till by little and little I gain'd the Shoar, a ſmall half quarter of a League below the Place where I had left the Tortoiſe.

Picard returning from the Chace, where he had kill'd nothing; and finding only my Habit upon the Tortoiſe, but no Canou, had reaſon to think that ſome Savage or other having found me alone, had kill'd me. In great ſuſpence, he return'd into the Meadows, to look about if he could ſee any Body. In the mean time, I had made what haſte I could up the River with my Canou; and had no ſooner taken up my Clothes, but I 'ſpy'd a Drove of ſixty Bulls and Cows, with their Calves, croſſing the River, towards the Land on the South-ſide. I purſued them in my Canou, and ſet up as great a Cry as I could, to give *Picard* notice of it. He made up to the Noiſe, and had time enough to get into the Canou, whilſt a Dog which we had with us, by his Barking, had drove them to a Bay in the Iſles of the River. When we were prepared, the Dog drove them from thence; and as they paſs'd by us, *Picard* kill'd one of them with his Fuſil, having lodg'd the Bullet in his Head. Having dragg'd it to the ſide of the River, it prov'd to be a Cow, that weigh'd about five or ſix hundred weight. The Bulls have more Fleſh, and weigh heavier; but becauſe we could

could not get it quite to Land, we contented our ſelves with cutting the beſt Pieces, and left the reſt in the Water.

'Twas almoſt now eight and forty hours ſince we eat laſt; ſo that we fell a kindling a Fire as faſt as we could, which we made of the Wood the River had thrown upon the Sands; and as faſt as *Picard* skinn'd it, I put the Pieces of Fleſh into our little earthen Pot to boil. We eat of it with that great greedineſs, that both of us were ſick; ſo that we were oblig'd to hide our ſelves in an Iſland, where we reſted two Days for the recovery of our Health by the help of my *Orvietan*, which was a great Benefit to us during the whole Voyage. Whilſt I was fetching the Pieces of Fleſh which *Picard* gave me, I went backward and forward very often cloſe by a Rattle-Snake, ſeven or eight Foot long, without perceiving him, as he lay wrapt aſleep in the Sun. I told *Picard* of it, who came and kill'd him with our Oar, and afterwards threw him into the River.

To be ſhort, we could not charge our ſelves with much Proviſions, becauſe of the ſmalneſs of our Canou; beſides that, the exceſſive Heat tainted it preſently, ſo that it would ſwarm with Worms in an inſtant. For theſe Reaſons we were ſoon in the ſame condition; and when we embarked in the Morning, we knew not whether we ſhould have any thing to eat at Night. Never had we more reaſon to admire the Goodneſs of Providence, than during this Voyage. It was not every Day we met with any Game, nor when we did, were we ſure to kill it.

The Eagles, which are to be ſeen in abundance in theſe vaſt Countries, will ſometimes drop a Breme, a large Carp, or ſome other Fiſh, as they are carrying them to their Neſts in their Talons, to feed their young. One day we eſpied an Otter, which was feeding on a great Fiſh upon the Bank of the River; which Fiſh had upon its Head a ſort of Beak about

about five Inches broad, and a Foot and a half long. As ſoon as *Picard* 'ſpy'd it, he cried out he ſaw the Devil between the Claws of the Otter. This Surprize was not ſo great, but that we made bold to feed heartily upon it. The Fleſh of it was good; and we nam'd it the Sturgeon with the long Beak.

CHAP. LXI.

We continue our Courſe in ſearch of the River Ouiſconſin. Aquipaguetin *finds us, and gets thither before us. We ſubſiſt meerly by Providence.*

NOtwithſtanding we had rowed ſo many Leagues, yet could we not find the River of *Ouiſconſin*: This made us believe that it was ſtill at a great diſtance from us; when behold *Aquipaguetin*, whom we believed to be above 200 Leagues off, appeared all on a ſudden, with ten Warriors with him, towards the middle of *July* 1680. We thought at firſt he came to kill us, becauſe we had quitted him, though 'twere by the conſent of the other Savages: But he gave us ſome wild Oats, with a Piece of good Bull's Fleſh; and asked us if we had found the *Europeans* who were to meet us with their Merchandiſe? Our Anſwer not ſatisfying him, he was reſolved to go to *Ouiſconſin* himſelf; but when he came there, found no Body. He returned at the end of three Days, as we were ſtill purſuing our Voyage, being reſolved to acquit our ſelves fully of the Promiſe which we had made the Sieur *de Salle*, to come thither and meet thoſe that he ſhould ſend.

When *Aquipaguetin* firſt appeared at his return, *Picard* was gone to Hunt in the Meads, and my ſelf remained alone in a little Cabin, which we had ſet up under our Coverlet, which one of the Savages had returned me, to ſhade us from the Sun-beams, which were

were very ſcorching at this Seaſon. *Aquipaguetin* ſeeing me alone, came up to me with his Club in his Hand: I immediately laid hold of my two Pocket-Piſtols and a Knife, which *Picard* had recovered out of the Hands of the Barbarians. I had no mind to kill the Man that had adopted me, but only frighten him, and keep him from murdering me, in caſe that were his intent.

Aquipaguetin began to reprimand me for expoſing my ſelf in the manner I did to the Inſults of their Enemies; and that at leaſt I ought to have kept the other ſide of the River. He would have carried me with him, telling me, That he had 300 Hunters with him, who kill'd more Game than thoſe that I was engaged with. And probably it had been more adviſeable for me to have followed his Advice, than to proſecute my Voyage any farther. However, our Reſolution then was, to continue our Courſe towards the River *Oniſconſin*; where when we came, we found none of the Men the Sieur *de la Salle* had promiſed to ſend us. *Picard* and my ſelf had like to have periſhed on a thouſand different Occaſions, as we came down the River: And now we found our ſelves obliged to go up it again, which could not be done without repeating the ſame Hazards, and other Difficulties not to be imagined.

CHAP. LXII.

The great Streights which the Author and his Companion are reduc'd to in their Voyage. They at laſt meet again with the Savages at their return from Hunting.

PICARD, who had been very ill uſed by the Savages, had rather venture all than go up the River with *Aquipaguetin*. Six Charges of Powder was all that we had left, which obliged us to husband it

it as well as could; wherefore we divided it into twenty, to ſhoot only for the future at Turtles or wild Pigeons. When theſe alſo were ſpent, we had recourſe to three Hooks, which we baited with ſome ſtinking Barbel that an Eagle hapned to drop. We took nothing the two firſt Days, and were deſtitute of all means of Subſiſtence. This made us, you muſt think, betake our ſelves to Prayers with greater Fervency than ever. And yet *Picard*, amidſt of all our Misfortunes, could not forbear telling me, That he ſhould pray to God with a much better Heart if his Belly were full.

I comforted both him and my ſelf as well as I could, and deſired him to row with all the force he had left, to ſee if we could catch a Tortoiſe. The next Morning, having rowed the beſt part of the Night, we found a Tortoiſe, which was no bigger than an ordinary Plate. We went to boiling him the ſame Minute on the Fire that we had kindled. We devoured it ſo haſtily, that I did not obſerve that I cut the Gall, which made my Mouth as bitter as it ſelf; but I ran immediately and gargled my Throat, and ſo fell to't again, with the ſame eagerneſs as before.

Notwithſtanding our famiſhed Condition, we got at laſt to the *River of Bulls*: Here we caſt our Hooks, which we baited with a white Fiſh that an Eagle had let fall. God, who never abandons thoſe that truſt in him, ſuccoured us very viſibly on this occaſion; for we had ſcarce finiſhed our Prayers towards ten at Night, when *Picard*, who heard the Noiſe, quitted his Devotion, and ran to the Hooks, where he found two Barbels hung, which were ſo large, that I was forced to help him to get them out of the Water. We did not ſtand to ſtudy what Sauce we ſhould make for theſe monſtrous Fiſh, which weighed above twenty five pound both; but having cut them to pieces, broiled them on the Coals. Boil them we could

could not, our little Earthen Pot being unhappily broke ſome time before.

When we had ſatisfied our Appetite, and returned our Thanks to Him, whoſe Providence had ſo ſeaſonably reliev'd us, we heard a noiſe about two in the Morning, upon the Bank of the *River of Bulls*, where we then were. After the *Who-goes-there?* we heard the Anſwer was, *Tepatoni Nika*, and the Word *Nikanagi*; which is as much as to ſay, *Friends, all is well.* I told *Picard*, that by the Language I believ'd them to be *Illinois*, or *Outouagamis*. who are Enemies of the *Iſſati*, or *Nadoueſſans*. But the Moon ſhining very bright, and the Day beginning to appear, I perceiv'd 'twas the Savage *Mamemiſi*, whoſe Infant-Daughter I Baptiz'd, when *Picard* aſſiſted as Godfather, or Witneſs. He knew us again preſently; and being juſt come from Hunting, where they had had plenty of Game, he gave us what Victuals we pleas'd; and inform'd us, that all thoſe of his Nation were coming down the *River of Bulls*, which diſcharges it ſelf into the *Meſchaſipi*, having their Wives and Children with them.

What he ſaid was true; for the Savages, with whom *Michael Ako* had ſtaid behind, were all deſcending the *River of Bulls* with their Fleet of Canou's well ſtored with Proviſions. *Aquipaguetin* by the way had acquainted thoſe of his Nation, how *Picard* and my ſelf had expos'd our ſelves in our Voyage to *Ouſconſin*, and what great Hazards we had ran. The Chiefs of the Savages gave us to underſtand, that they were very well ſatisfied with what we had done: But all of them reproach'd *Michael Ako* for a baſe Fellow, who had refus'd to accompany us for fear of being famiſh'd by the way. *Picard* too, but that I did what I could to hinder it, would have us'd him ill before all the Company, ſo incens'd was he againſt him, for his want of Courage and Affection.

CHAP. LXIII.

The Savage Women hide their Proviſions up-and-down in private Holes. They go down the River again a ſecond time. Addreſs of the Savages. Bravery of one of the Savages.

THE Savage Women being come to the Mouth of the *River of Bulls*, hid their Proviſions up-and-down the little Iſlands that are there, and in hollow Places under-ground. Theſe People have a way to preſerve their Meat thus, without Salt, as we ſhall ſee hereafter. We fell down the River a ſecond time, in company of a multitude of Canou's, of which I have already ſpoke, Hunting all the way as we went, and were got a matter of fourſcore Leagues. The Savages from time to time hid their Canous in the little Iſland, or in the Reeds upon the Bank of the River, and went ſeven or eight Leagues up the Country into the Meadows beyond the Mountains, where at ſeveral times they kill'd between an hundred and ſixſcore Cows and Bulls. Whilſt they are at the Chaſe, they always leave ſome Old Men on the top of the Mountains, to ſee if they can diſcover the Enemy.

All this while I had a Savage under my Cure, who uſually call'd me Brother: He had run a Thorn very deep into his Foot, and I was then putting a Plaiſter on it, when on a ſudden the Alarm was taken in our Camp. Two hundred Archers immediately ran to ſee what was the Matter; and the generous Savage, whoſe Foot I had laid open, in order to get out the Thorn, which was very deep, ſprung likewiſe from me on a ſudden, and ran as faſt as the beſt, that he might not loſe his Share in the Action. But inſtead of the Enemy, they could ſee nothing but about an hundred Stags, which were running away as faſt as they could. My poor Patient had much ado to recover the Camp. All the while the Alarm laſted,

the

the Women and Maids kept ſinging in a very ſad and melancholy Tone.

Picard being gone to his Hoſt, I was left alone with one *Otchimbi*; but after the ſecond Hunting, I was forc'd to carry an Old Woman with me in my Canou, who was above fourſcore: For all that, ſhe help'd me to row, and with her Oar would now-and-then pat two or three little Children, that lay and diſturb'd us in the middle of our Canou. The Men were very kind to me; but for all that, 'twas neceſſary to make a Court to the Women; for the Victuals were all in their Cuſtody, who deliver'd every one his Meſs. This I did by ſhaving now-and-then the Crowns of their Children's Heads, who wear their Hair ſhorn not unlike our Monks. They let it grow till they are fifteen, ſixteen, or eighteen Years old, as well on the top of the Head, as elſewhere; but at that Age, their Parents take it off, by burning it with flat Stones made red-hot in the Fire: So that the Women thought themſelves mightily beholding to me for ſhaving their Children, becauſe I took off the Hair without pain.

We had again another Alarm in our Camp: The Old Men, who had their Station on the top of the Mountains, ſent to give notice that they had deſcry'd ſome Warriors from afar. The Archers ran as hard as they could drive, towards the Place where the Enemy was ſaid to appear; every one endeavouring to be firſt in the Action. But after all this Noiſe, they brought nothing back with them but two Women of their own Nation, who were come to acquaint them that one of their Parties being gone a Hunting, towards the end of the Upper Lake, had light upon five Spirits, by which Name it is they call the *Europeans*. They added, That theſe Spirits had talk'd to 'em, by means of ſome of their Nation who had ſeen us, and had been Slaves amongſt the *Outouagamis* and *Iroquoeſe*, whoſe Language they underſtood.

derſtood: That they had alſo deſir'd them to conduct them to the Place where we were, becauſe they ſhould be very glad to know whether we were *Engliſh*, *Dutch*, *Spaniards*, or *Canadians*: And farther, That they could not imagine how we had been able to penetrate ſo far up into the Country among theſe People.

I muſt obſerve hereupon, That there are certain Perſons at *Canada*, who have got the Management of all Affairs there into their hands, as I have elſewhere ſaid. Theſe People being very angry, that we had been aforehand with them in our Diſcoveries, had ſent Men after us to ſhare in the Glory of the Action: For they hoped by our Means to get a Knowledge of the Nations which we had ſeen, in order to Trade thither, as ſoon as they ſhould have a Pretence of ſending us back to *Europe*.

CHAP. LXIV.

Arrival of the Sieur Du Luth *in our Camp. He deſires us to return with him and his Followers to the Country of the* Iſſati *and* Nadoueſſians. *The Author caſt my Coverlet over a dead Man. The Savages are pleas'd at it.*

THE 28th of *July*, 1680. we began to aſcend the River *Meſchaſipi* the third time. The Savages, who had made a great Hunt with good Succeſs, were reſolv'd to return home to their own Villages, and preſs'd us to go with them; promiſing to conduct us as far as the Nations that inhabited at the End of the Upper-Lake. They ſaid they had a deſign to make an Alliance with thoſe People through our Means. The Sieur *du Luth* was arriv'd there from *Canada*, accompany'd with five Men, whoſe Equipage was half Soldier, half Merchant.

They

They came up to us in company with the two Savage-Women an hundred and twenty Leagues, or thereabouts, from the Country of the *Barbarians*, that had taken us. They deſir'd us, becauſe we had ſome knowledge of the Language of the *Iſſati*, to accompany them back to the Villages of thoſe People. I readily agreed to their Requeſt, eſpecially when I underſtood that they had not receiv'd the Sacraments in the whole two Years and a half that they had been out upon their Voyage. The Sieur *du Luth*, who paſs'd for their Captain, was over-joy'd to ſee me, and told me as a Secret, That thoſe who had ſent him, would miſs of their Aim, as he would let me know more at leiſure. And obſerving how I ſhav'd the Crowns of the Young Savages, he order'd them to be told I was his eldeſt Brother.

All this made the Savages treat me better than ever, and furniſh me very plentifully with Proviſions. I apply'd my ſelf alſo more than ever to the means of their Salvation; and 'tis true they hearken'd to me attentively enough. But then, to make any progreſs, one muſt live whole Years among them, they are ſo ignorant, and grounded in Superſtitution.

The Sieur *du Luth* was charm'd at the ſight of the Fall of *St. Anthony of Padua*, which was the Name we had given it, and in all appearance will remain with it. I alſo ſhew'd him the craggy Rock, where the monſtrous Serpent was climbing up to devour the young Swallows in their Neſts; and recounted to him the Horror that ſeiz'd *Picard*, at the Image his Fancy fram'd of that terrible Animal in his Dream.

I muſt here obſerve, that ſeeing my ſelf at Liberty to ſay my Office after the Arrival of the Sieur *du Luth*, to be more exact in the Service, I thought I would ask him the Day of the Month: He told me as freely, he could not ſatisfy me in that Point, for he

had no Notion of it left. Upon this I recounted to him the ill uſage which we received at the Hands of the *Barbarians*, at their firſt taking us, which proceeded many times ſo far as to threaten our Lives; that therefore he ought not to be ſurpriz'd, if through the Terrors and Apprehenſions which I had lain ſo long under, I had forgot even the Day of the Week.

We arrived at the Villages of the *Iſſati* on the 14th of *Auguſt*, 1680. where I found my *Chalice* very ſafe, with the Books and Papers which I had hid under-ground, in preſence of the Savages themſelves. Theſe Wretches had never had ſo much as a thought to meddle with them, being fearful and ſuperſtitious in relation to Spirits, and believing there is Witchcraft in every thing they cannot apprehend. The Tobacco which I planted before our Departure, was half choak'd with Graſs. But the Cabbage, and other things which I had ſown, were of a prodigious growth. The Stalks of the Purſlain were as big as Reeds: But the Savages were afraid ſo much as to taſte them.

A little after our return, the Savages invited us to a great Feaſt after their own faſhon. There were above an hundred and twenty Men at it naked. *Ouaſcoude*, the firſt Captain of the Nation, and Kinſman of the Deceas'd, whoſe dead Body I covered, when they brought him back to the Village in a Canou, brought me ſome dry'd Fleſh and wild Oats in a diſh of Bark, which he ſet before me upon a Bull's Hide, whitened, and garniſhed with Porcupine Skins on the one ſide, and curl'd Wooll on the other.

After I had eat, this Chief put the ſame Robe on my Head, and covered my Face with it, ſaying with a loud Voice before all that were preſent, *He whoſe dead Body thou didſt cover, covers thine while alive. He has carry'd the Tydings of it to the Country of Souls*, (for theſe People believe the Tranſmigration of Souls:)

What

What thou didſt in reſpect of the Dead, is highly to be eſteemed: All the Nation applauds and thanks thee for it.

After this he gently reproached the Sieur *du Luth*, that he did not cover the Dead, as I had done. To which the Sieur deſired me to anſwer, That he never covered the Bodies of any but ſuch Captains as himſelf. To which the Savage anſwered, *Father* Louis (for ſo he heard the *Europeans* call me) *is a greater Captain than thou: His Robe* (ſpeaking of my Brocard Chaſuble, which they had taken from me, and was afterwards ſent as a Preſent to our Allies, who lived three Moons diſtance from this Country) *was finer than what thou weareſt.*

When theſe Savages ſpeak of a Journey of three or more Moons, they mean Months. They march well, and will travel fifteen Leagues a Day. By which the Reader may judge what an extent of Ground they can go in three Months.

CHAP. LXV.

The Author takes his leave of the Savages to return to Canada. *A Savage is ſlain by his Chief, for adviſing to kill us. Diſpute between the Sieur* du Luth *and the Author, about the Sacrifice of Barbarians.*

TOwards the end of *September*, ſeeing we had no Tools proper to build a Houſe to dwell in during the Winter, among theſe People; and conſidering that we were deſtitute of Proviſions neceſſary to ſubſiſt there, as our Deſign was at firſt to have done, we reſolved to let them underſtand, that to procure them Iron, and other Merchandizes, which were uſeful for them, 'twas convenient that we ſhould return to *Canada*, and that at a certain time which we ſhould agree upon between us, they ſhould come half the way with their Furrs, and we the other half with our *European* Commodities:

That they might let two of their Warriors go with us, whom we would carry into our Country, and likewiſe bring back again the next Year to the place appointed for meeting, from whence they might proceed to acquaint them of our return, in order to their meeting us with their Effects.

Upon this they held a great Council, to conſider whether they ſhould ſend ſome of their Nation with us or no. Two there were who were for it, and offer'd themſelves to be the Men: But they alter'd their Opinion the Day of our Departure, alledging for a Reaſon, That we were obliged to paſs through many Nations who were their ſworn Enemies, and would be ſure to ſeize their Men, and take them out of our Hands, either to burn them, or put them otherwiſe to Death by exquiſite Torments, and that without our being able to hinder it, being ſo few in Number as we were.

I anſwer'd, That all thoſe People, whom they were afraid of, were our Friends and Allies, and that in conſideration of us, they would forbear to injure any of their Nation that were with us. Theſe Barbarians want no Wit; on the contrary, their Natural Parts are extraordinary. They told us in return, that ſince we were to paſs through theſe People, who were their ſworn Enemies, we ſhould do well to deſtroy them, at whoſe Hands they had receiv'd ſo many Injuries; that then their Men ſhould go and return with us to fetch them Iron, and other Commodities which they wanted, and would gladly treat with us about. From whence we may gather, that theſe Barbarians are full of Reſentment, and Thoughts of Revenge, Diſpoſitions not altogether ſo well prepared, to receive the meek Doctrin of the Goſpel.

In fine, *Ouaſicoude* their Chief Captain, having conſented to our Return, in a full Council, gave us ſome Buſhels of Wild-Oats, for our Subſiſtence by

by the way, having firſt regal'd us in the beſt manner he could, after their faſhion. We have already obſerv'd, that theſe Oats are better and more wholſome than Rice. After this, with a Pencil, he mark'd down on a Sheet of Paper, which I had left, the Courſe that we were to keep for four hundred Leagues together. In ſhort, this natural Geographer deſcrib'd our Way ſo exactly, that this Chart ſerved us as well as my Compaſs could have done. For by obſerving it punctually, we arriv'd at the Place which we deſigned, without loſing our way in the leaſt.

All things being ready, we diſpoſed our ſelves to depart, being eight *Europeans* of us in all. We put our ſelves into two Canous, and took our leaves of our Friends, with a Volly of our Men's Fuſils, which put them into a terrible Fright. We fell down the River of St. *Francis*, and then that of the *Meſchaſipi*. Two of our Men, without ſaying any thing, had taken down two Robes of Caſtor, from before the Fall of St. *Anthony* of *Padua*, where the Barbarians had hung them upon a Tree as a ſort of Sacrifice. Hereupon aroſe a Diſpute between the Sieur *du Luth* and my ſelf. I commended what they had done, ſaying, *The Barbarians might judge by it, that we diſapproved their Superſtition.* On the contrary, the Sieur *du Luth* maintained, That they ought to have let the things alone in that place where they were, for that the Savages would not fail to revenge the Affront which we had put upon them by this Action, and that it was to be feared leſt they ſhould purſue and inſult us by the Way.

I own he had ſome Grounds for what he ſaid, and that he argu'd according to the Rules of Humane Prudence. But the two Men anſwer'd him bluntly, that the things fitted them, and therefore they ſhould not trouble their Heads about the Savages, not their Superſtitions. The Sieur *du Luth* fell

fell into ſo violent a Paſſion at theſe Words, that he had like to have ſtruck the Fellow that ſpake them; but I got between, and reconciled the Matter: For *Picard* and *Michael Ako* began to ſide with thoſe that had taken away the things in queſtion, which might have prov'd of ill conſequence. I aſſured the Sieur *du Luth*, that the Savages durſt not hurt us, for that I was perſuaded their Grand Captain *Ouaſicoude* would always make our Cauſe his own, and that we might rely on his Word, and the great Credit he had among thoſe of his Nation. Thus the Buſineſs was peaceably made up, and we ſailed down the River together as good Friends as ever, hunting the Wild-Beaſts as we went.

When we were got almoſt as far as the River *Ouiſconſin*, we made a ſtop, to ſmoak after the manner of the Country, the Fleſh of the Bulls which we had kill'd by the Way. During our ſtay here, for the Reaſon aforeſaid, three Savages of the ſame Nation, which we had lately left, came up to us in their Canou, to acquaint us that their Grand Captain *Ouaſicoude* having learnt that another Chief of the ſame Nation had a Deſign to purſue and murder us, he came into the Cabin where the ſaid Captain and his Aſſociates were conſulting about it, and gave him a Blow on the Head with ſo much Fury, that his Brains flew out upon thoſe that were preſent at the Conſult, reſolving by this means effectually to prevent the Execution of his pernicious Deſign. We regal'd the three Savages for their good News very nobly, having plenty of Proviſions at that time.

The Sieur *du Luth*, as ſoon as the Savages were gone, fell into as great a Paſſion as before, and ſeem'd very apprehenſive leſt they ſhould ſtill purſue and ſet upon us in our Voyage. He would have carried Matters farther, but that he found our Men would not bate him an Ace, and were not in an Humour

mour to be bullied. I took upon me to moderate the Matter once more, and pacified them in the End, by aſſuring them that God would not leave us in Diſtreſs, provided we put our Truſt in him, and that he was able to deliver us from all our Enemies.

CHAP. LXVI.

The Sieur du Luth *is in a great Conſternation at the Appearance of a Fleet of the Savages, who ſurprized us before we were got into the River* Ouiſconſin.

THE Sieur *du Luth* had reaſon to believe that the three Savages but now mentioned were really Spies ſent to obſerve our Actions; for indeed they knew that we had taken away the Robes of Caſtor from before the Fall of *St. Anthony*. He could not forego his Fears, but told me, we ſhould ſerve the Fellow that did it but right, if we ſhould force him to carry them back, and leave them in the place where he found them. I foreſaw Diſcord would be our Deſtruction, and ſo made my ſelf Mediator of the Peace once more. I appeas'd the Fray, by remonſtrating, That God, who had preſerved us hitherto in the greateſt Dangers, would have a more peculiar Care of us on this Occaſion, becauſe the Man's Action was good in it ſelf.

Two Days after, all our Proviſions being drèſs'd, and fit to keep, we prepared to depart: But the Sieur *du Luth* was mightily ſurpriz'd when he perceived a Fleet of an hundred and forty Canous, carrying about an hundred and fifty Men, bearing down directly upon us. Our Mens Conſternation was no leſs than the Sieur's: But when they ſaw me take out from among our Equipage, a Calumet of Peace which the *Iſſati* had given us as a Pledge of their

their Friendſhip and Protection, they took Heart, and told me they would act as I ſhould direct.

I order'd two of them to embark with me in a Canow, to meet the Savages: But the Sieur deſir'd me to take a third to row, that by ſtanding in the middle of the Canow, I might the better ſhow the Pipe of Peace, which I carry'd in my hand, to appeaſe the Barbarians, whoſe Language I underſtood indifferently well. The other four of our Men I left with the Sieur *du Luth*, and told them, in caſe any of the young Warriors ſhould Land, and come up to them, they ſhou'd by no means diſcourſe or be familiar with them; but that they ſhould keep their Poſts with their Arms ready fixt. Having given theſe Orders, I went into my Canow, to the Barbarians who were a coming down the River in theirs.

Seeing no Chief amongſt them, I called out as loud as I could, *Onaſiconde*, *Onaſiconde*, repeating his Name ſeveral times. At laſt I perceived him rowing up towards me: All this while none of his People had affronted us, which I look'd upon as a good Omen. I concealed my Reed of Peace, the better to let them ſee how much I rely'd upon their Word. Soon after we landed, and entred the Cabin where the Sieur *du Luth* was, who would have embrac'd their Captain. Here we muſt obſerve, that 'tis not the Cuſtom of the Savages to embrace after the manner of the *French*. I told the Sieur *du Luth* that he need only preſent him with a piece of the beſt boyl'd Meat that he had, and that in caſe he eat of it, we were ſafe.

It hapned according to our Wiſh; all the reſt of the Captains of this little Army came to viſit us, It coſt our Folks nothing but a few Pipes of *Martinico*-Tobacco, which theſe People are paſſionately fond of, though their own be ſtronger, more agreeable, and of a much better Scent. Thus the Barbarians were very civil to us, without ever mentioning the

Robes

Robes of Caſtor. The Chief *Ouaſicoude* advis'd me to preſent ſome Pieces of *Martinico* Tobacco to the Chief *Aquipaguetin*, who had adopted me for his Son. This Civility had ſtrange effects upon the Barbarians, who went off ſhouting, and repeating the Word *Louis*, which as we ſaid, ſignifies the *Sun:* So that I muſt ſay without Vanity, my Name will be as it were immortal amongſt theſe People, by reaſon of its jumping ſo accidentally with that of the Sun.

CHAP. LXVII.

The Author's Voyage from the Mouth of the River Ouiſconſin, *to the great Bay of the* Puans.

THE Savages having left us to go and War upon the *Meſſorites*, *Mahoras*, *Illinois*, and other Nations, which inhabit towards the lower part of the River *Meſchaſipi*, and are irreconcilable Enemies to the People of the *North*; the Sieur *du Luth*, who upon many Occaſions approv'd himſelf to be much my Friend, could not forbear telling our People, that I had all the reaſon in the World to believe that the Viceroy of *Canada* would give me a very kind Reception, in caſe we could arrive there before Winter; and that he wiſh'd with all his heart he had been among ſo many different Nations as my ſelf.

As we went up the River *Ouiſconſin*, we found it was as large as that of the *Illinois*, which is navigable for large Veſſels above an hundred Leagues. We could not ſufficiently admire the Extent of thoſe vaſt Countries, and the Charming Lands through which we paſs'd, which lie all untill'd. The cruel Wars which theſe Nations have one with another, are the cauſe that they have not People enough to cul-

cultivate them. And the more bloody Wars which have rag'd ſo long in all parts of *Europe*, have hinder'd the ſending Chriſtian Colonies to ſettle there. However, I muſt needs ſay, that the poorer ſort of our Countrymen would do well to think of it, and go and plant themſelves in this fine Country, where for a little Pains in tilling the Earth, they would live happier, and ſubſiſt much better than they do here. I have ſeen Lands there, which would yield three Crops in a Year: And the Air is incomparably more ſweet and temperate than in *Holland*.

After we had rowed about ſeventy Leagues upon the River *Ouiſconſin*, we came to a Place where we were forc'd to carry our Canow for half a League, which *Ouaſicoude* had ſet down in his Chart. We lay at this place all night, and left Marks of our having been there, by the Croſſes which we cut on the Barks of the Trees. Next Day, having carried our Canows and the reſt of our little Equipage over this piece of Land, we entred into a River, which makes almoſt as many Meanders as that of the *Illinois* doth at its Riſe: For after ſix Hours rowing, which we did very faſt, we found our ſelves, notwithſtanding all the Pains we hnd been at, over againſt the Place where we Embark'd. One of our Men muſt needs ſhoot at a Bird flying, which overſet his Canow; but by good luck he was within his depth.

We were forc'd to break ſeveral Sluces which the Caſtors had made for our Canows to paſs; otherwiſe we could not have continued our Way, or carried our things to embark them again above theſe Sluces.

Theſe Creatures make them with ſo much Art, that Man cannot equal it. We ſhall ſpeak of them in our *Second Volume*. We found ſeveral of theſe Ponds, or Stops of Water, which theſe Creatures make with Pieces of Wood, like a Cauſey.

After this we paſs'd over four Lakes, which are all

all made by this River. Here formerly dwelt the *Miamis*; but now the *Maskoutens*, *Kikapous*, and *Outoagamis*, who ſow their *Indian* Wheat here, on which they chiefly ſubſiſt. We made ſome Broath of the Water of a certain Fall, which they call *Kakalin*; becauſe the Savages come often hither to eaſe themſelves, and lie on their Backs, with their Faces expos'd to the Sun.

Thus having made more than Four hundred Leagues by Water ſince our departure from the Country of the *Iſſati* and *Naudoueſſans*, we arriv'd at laſt at the great Bay of the *Puans*, which makes part of the Lake of the *Illinois*.

CHAP. LXVIII.

The Author and his Company ſtay ſome time amongſt the Puans. *The Original of the Name. They celebrated Maſs here, and wintered at* Miſſilimakinak.

WE found many *Canadians* in this Bay of the *Puans*. The Nation that inhabits here, is ſo call'd, becauſe formerly they dwelt in certain Marſhy Places, full of ſtinking Waters, ſituate on the *South-Sea*. But being drove out thence by their Enemy, they came and ſettled in this Bay, which is to the Eaſt of the *Illinois*. The *Canadians* were come hither to Trade with the People of this Bay, contrary to an Order of the Viceroy. They had ſtill a little of the Wine left, which they brought with them, and kept in a Pewter Flagon. I made uſe of it for Maſs. Till now, I had nothing but a Chalice, and a Marble Altar, which was pretty light, and very handſomly engrav'd: But here by good Fortune I met with the Sacerdotal Robes too. Some *Illinois* who had happily eſcap'd their Enemies the *Iroqueſe*, who had attack'd and almoſt deſtroy'd them ſince my

my Voyage, and the time that I had been a Slave amongst the Barbarians, had brought with them the Ornaments of the Chapel of Father *Zenobius Membre*, whom we had left among the *Illinois*. Some of these, I say, who were escap'd to the Place where we were, delivered me up all the Ornaments of the Chapel, except the Chalice. They promised to get me that too for a little Tobacco, which I was to give them; and were as good as their Word, for they brought it me some few Days after.

'Twas more than nine Months since I had celebrated the Sacrament of the Mass, for want of Wine. We might indeed have done it in our Voyage, had we had Vessels proper to keep Wine in: But we could not charge our Canow with such, being very unfit to carry things of Burden. 'Tis true, we met with Grapes in many Places through which we pass'd, and had made some Wine too, which we put into Gourds; but it fail'd us whilst we were among the *Illinois*, as I have elsewhere observ'd. As for the rest, I had still some Wafers by me, which were as good as ever, having been kept in a Steel-Box shut very close.

We stay'd two Days at the Bay of the *Puans*; where we sung *Te Deum*, and my self said Mass and Preach'd. Our Men prepar'd themselves for the Holy Sacrament, whith we receiv'd, in order to render our Thanks to God, who had preserved us amidst the many Dangers we had run, the Difficulties we had surmounted, and Monsters we had overcome.

One of our Canow-Men truck'd a Fusil with a Savage for a Canow larger than our own, in which, after an hundred Leagues rowing, having coasted all along the great Bay of the *Puans*, we arrived at *Missilimakinak*, in the Lake of *Huron*, where we were forc'd to Winter: For our Way lying still North, we should infallibly have perish'd amongst the Ice and Snow, had we proceeded any further,

By

By the Courſe we were oblig'd to take, we were ſtill about four hundred Leagues from *Canada*. Amongſt theſe People, I met, to my no little Satisfaction, Father *Pierſon*, a Jeſuit, who is a Son of the King's Receiver for the Town of *Aeth* in *Hainault*. He was come hither to learn their Language, and ſpoke it then paſſably well. This *Religious*, who retaind ſtill the free and open Humour of his Country-Men, had made himſelf belov'd by his obliging Behaviour, and ſeem'd to be an utter Enemy of Caballing and Intrigues, having a candid Spirit, generous and ſincere. In a word, He appear'd to me to be ſuch as every good Chriſtian ought to be. The Reader may judge how agreeably I paſs'd the Winter in ſuch good Company, after the Miſeries and Fatigues I had undergone in the Courſe of our Diſcoveries.

To make the beſt uſe of my time that I could, I Preach'd all the Holy-days and Sundays in *Advent* and *Lent*, for the Edification of our Men, and other *Canadians*, who were come four or five Leagues out of their Country, to Trade for Furs amongſt theſe Savages: From whence we may obſerve, that there are ſome, whom I ſhall forbear to name, who notwithſtanding all their pretended Auſterities, are yet no leſs covetous of the Things of this World, than the moſt Secular Perſon in it. The *Outtaouacts* and the *Hurons* would often aſſiſt at our Ceremonies in a Church cover'd with Ruſhes and a few Boards, which the *Canadians* had built here: But they came more out of Curioſity than any Deſign to conform themſelves to the Rules of our Holy Religion.

The latter of theſe Savages would tell us, ſpeaking of our Diſcoveries, That themſelves were but Men; but for us *Europeans*, we muſt needs be Spirits: That if they had gone ſo far up amongſt ſtrange Nations as we had done, they ſhould have been ſure to have been kill'd by them without Mercy; whereas we paſs'd every where without danger, and

knew how to procure the Friendſhip of all we met.

During the Winter, we broke Holes in the Ice of the Lake *Huron*, and by means of ſeveral large Stones, ſunk our Nets ſometimes twenty, ſometimes twenty five fathom under Water to catch Fiſh, which we did in great abundance. We took Salmon-Trouts, which often weighed from forty to fifty pounds. Theſe made our *Indian* Wheat go down the better, which was our ordinary Diet. Our Beverage was nothing but Broth made of Whiteings, which we drank hot; becauſe as it cools it turns to Jelly, as if it had been made of Veal.

During our ſtay here, Pather *Pierſon* and I would often divert our ſelves on the Ice, where we skated on the Lake as they do in *Holland*. I had learn'd this Slight when I was at *Ghent*, from whence to *Bruſſels* one may run in three Hours with abundance of Pleaſure when the Canal is frozen. 'Tis the uſual Diverſion with which the Inhabitants of theſe two Cities entertain themſelves during the Winter, by favour of the Ice.

It muſt be allow'd, without reflecting on any other Order, That thoſe of *St. Francis* are very proper for the ſetling of Colonies. They make a ſtrict Vow of Poverty, and have a Property in nothing as their own: They enjoy only a ſimple Uſe of Things neceſſary to Life. Thoſe that give us any Moveables, continue ſtill to be the owners of them, and may take them again at Pleaſure. 'Tis this Poverty which is recommended to us by many Popes; but above all by our Rule, which is the only one I find incerted in the Canon-Law.

What paſs'd at *Miſſilimakinak* during this Winter, is a Proof of what I ſay. Two and forty *Canadians*, who were come hither upon the account of the Trade which they drive here with the Savages, deſir'd me to preſent them with the Cord of St. *Francis*. I compli'd with their Requeſt; and each time I deliver'd

liver'd a Cord, made a ſmall Harangue by way of Exhortation to the Perſon receiving it, and then aſſociated him to the Prayers of the Order. They would have kept me with them, and made me a Settlement, where from time to time they might have reſort to me. They promiſed me moreover, ſince I would accept of no Furs, that they would prevail with the Savages to furniſh out my Subſiſtence in the beſt manner which could be expected for the Country. But becauſe the greateſt part of them that made me this Offer, Traded into theſe Parts without permiſſion, I gave them to underſtand, That the Common Good of our Diſcoveries, ought to be preferr'd before their private Advantages; ſo deſir'd them to excuſe me, and permit me to return to *Canada* for a more Publick Good.

CHAP. LXIX.

The Author's Departure from Miſſilimakanak. *He paſſes two great Lakes. The taking of a Great Bear. Some Particulars relating to the Fleſh of that Beaſt.*

WE parted from *Miſſilimakinak* in *Eaſter*-Week, 1681. and for twelve or thirteen Leagues together, were oblig'd to draw our Proviſions and Canow's after us over the Ice, up the Lake *Huron*, the ſides of which continu'd ſtill froze five or ſix Leagues broad. The Ice being broke, we embark'd, after the Solemnity of the *Quaſimodo*, which we had an opportunity to celebrate, having by good Fortune met with a little Wine, which a *Canadian* had brought with him, and ſerv'd us all the reſt of our Voyage. After we had rowed an hundred Leagues all along the ſides of the Lake *Huron*, we paſs'd the Streights, which are thirty Leagues through, and the Lake of St. *Claire*, which is in the middle: Thence

we arriv'd at the Lake *Erie*, or of the *Cat*, where we ſtai'd ſome time to kill Sturgeon, which come here in great numbers, to caſt their Spawn on the ſide of the Lake. We took nothing but the Belly of the Fiſh, which is the moſt delicious part, and threw away the reſt.

This Place afforded alſo plenty of Veniſon and Fowl. As we were ſtanding in the Lake, upon a large Point of Land which runs it ſelf very far into the Water, we perceiv'd a Bear in it as far as we could ſee. We could not Imagine how this Creature got there; 'twas very improbable that he ſhould ſwim from one ſide to t'other, that was thirty or forty Leagues over. It hapned to be very calm; and ſo two of our Men leaving us on the Point, put off to attack the Bear, that was near a quarter of a League out in the Lake. They made two Shot at him one after another, otherwiſe the Beaſt had certainly ſunk them. As ſoon as they had fir'd, they were forc'd to ſheer off as faſt as they could to charge again; which when they had done, they return'd to the Attack. The Bear was forc'd to ſtand it; and it coſt them no leſs than ſeven Shot before they could compaſs him.

As they were endeavouring to get him aboard, they were like to have been over-ſet; which if they had, they muſt have been infallibly loſt: All they could do was to faſten him to the Bar that is in the middle of the Canow, and ſo drag him on Shoar; which they did at laſt with much ado, and great hazard of their Lives. We had all the leiſure that was requiſite for the dreſſing and ordering him, ſo as to make him keep; and in the mean time took out his Intrails, and having cleans'd and boil'd them, eat heartily of them. Theſe are as good a Diſh as thoſe of our Sucking-Pigs in *Europe*. His Fleſh ſerv'd us the reſt of our Voyage, which we uſually eat with lean Goats-fleſh, becauſe it is too fat

fat to eat by it ſelf: So that we liv'd for an hundred Leagues upon the Game that we kill'd in this Place.

CHAP. LXX.

The Meeting of the Author and a certain Captain of the Outtaouacts, *nam'd* Talon *by the Intendant of that Name, upon the Lake of* Erie; *who recounts to him many Adventures of his Family and Nation. Further Obſervations upon the Great Fall or Catracts of* Niagara.

THere was a certain Captain of the *Outtaouacts*, to whom the Intendant *Talon* gave his own Name, whileſt he was at *Quebec*. He us'd to come often to that City with thoſe of his Nation, who brought Furs thither: We were ſtrangely ſurpriz'd at the ſight of this Man, whom we found almoſt famiſhed, and more like a Skeleton than a living Man. He told us the Name of *Talon* would be ſoon extinct in this Country, ſince he reſolved not to ſurvive the Loſs of ſix of his Family who had been ſtarved to Death. He added, That the Fiſhery and Chace had both fail'd this Year, which was the occaſion of this ſad Diſaſter.

He told us moreover, That though the *Iroqueſe* were not in War with his Nation, yet had they taken and carried into Slavery an entire Family of Twelve Souls. He begg'd very earneſtly of me, that I would uſe my utmoſt Endeavours to have them releas'd, if they were yet alive; and gave me two Necklaces of Black and White Porcelain, that I might be ſure not to neglect a Buſineſs which he laid ſo much to heart. *I can rely upon thee*, Bare-foot, (for ſo they always call'd us) *and am confident that the* Iroqueſe *will harken to thy Reaſons ſooner than any ones. Thou diſt often ad-*

viſe them at their Councils, which were held then at the Fort of Katarockoui, *where thou haſt caus'd a great Cabin to be built. Had I been at my Village when thou cam'ſt through it, I would have done all that I could to have kept thee, inſtead of the Black Coat* (ſo they call the Jeſuites) *which was there.* When the poor Captain had done ſpeaking, I ſolemnly promis'd him to uſe my utmoſt Intereſt with the *Iroqueſe*, for the releaſement of his Friends.

After we had row'd above an hundred and forty Leagues upon the Lake *Erie*, by reaſon of the many Windings of the Bays and Creeks which we were forc'd to coaſt, we paſs'd by the Great Fall of *Niagara*, and ſpent half a Day in conſidering the Wonders of that prodigious Caſcade.

I could not conceive how it came to paſs, that four great Lakes, the leaſt of which is 400 Leagues in compaſs, ſhould empty themſelves one into another, and then all centre and diſcharge themſelves at this Great Fall, and yet not drown good part of *America*. What is yet more ſurprizing, the Ground from the Mouth of the Lake *Erie*, down to the Great Fall, appears almoſt level and flat. 'Tis ſcarce diſcernable that there is the leaſt Riſe or Fall for ſix Leagues together: The more than ordinary ſwiftneſs of the Stream, is the only thing that makes it be obſerved. And that which makes it yet the ſtranger is, That for two Leagues together below the Fall, towards the Lake *Ontario*, or *Frontenac*, the Lands are as level as they are above it towards the Lake of *Erie*.

Our Surpriſe was ſtill greater, when we obſerv'd there were no Mountains within two good Leagues of this Caſcade; and yet the vaſt quantity of Water which is diſcharg'd by theſe four freſh Seas, ſtops or centers here, and ſo falls above ſix hundred Foot down into a Gulph, which one cannot look upon without Horror. Two other great Out-lets, or Falls of Water, which are on the two ſides of a ſmall ſloping Iſland,

Iſland, which is in the midſt, fall gently and without noiſe, and ſo glide away quietly enough: But when this prodigious quantity of Water, of which I ſpeak, comes to fall, there is ſuch a din, and ſuch a noiſe, that is more deafning than the loudeſt Thunder.

The rebounding of theſe Waters is ſo great, that a ſort of Cloud ariſes from the Foam of it, which are ſeen hanging over this Abyſs even at Noon-day, when the Sun is at its heighth. In the midſt of Summer, when the Weather is hotteſt, they ariſe above the talleſt Firrs, and other great Trees, which grow in the ſlooping Iſland which make the two Falls of Waters that I ſpoke of.

I wiſh'd an hundred times that ſomebody had been with us, who could have deſcry'd the Wonders of this prodigious frightful Fall, ſo as to give the Reader a juſt and natural Idea of it, ſuch as might ſatisfy him, and create in him an Admiration of this Prodigy of Nature as great as it deſerves. In the mean time, accept the following Draught, ſuch as it is; in which however I have endeavour'd to give the curious Reader as juſt an Image of it as I could.

We muſt call to mind what I obſerved of it in the beginning of my Voyage, which is to be ſeen in the Seventh Chapter of this Book. From the Mouth of the Lake *Erie* to the Great Fall, are reckon'd ſix Leagues, as I have ſaid, which is the continuation of the Great River of *St. Lawrence*, which ariſes out of the four Lakes above-mention'd. The River, you muſt needs think, is very rapid for theſe ſix Leagues, becauſe of the vaſt Diſcharge of Waters which fall into it out of the ſaid Lakes. The Lands, which lie on both ſides of it to the Eaſt and Weſt, are all level from the Lake *Erie* to the Great Fall. Its Banks are not ſteep; on the contrary, the Water is almoſt always level with the Land. 'Tis certain, That the Ground towards the Fall is lower,

by the more than ordinary ſwiftneſs of the Stream; and yet 'tis not perceivable to the Eye for the ſix Leagues aboveſaid.

After it has run thus violently for ſix Leagues, it meets with a ſmall ſloping Iſland, about half a quarter of a League long, and near three hundred Foot broad, as well as one can gueſs by the Eye; for it is impoſſible to come at it in a Canou of Bark, the Waters run with that force. The Iſle is full of Cedar and Firr; but the Land of it lies no higher than that on the Banks of the River. It ſeems to be all level, even as far as the two great Caſcades that make the main Fall.

The two ſides of the Channels, which are made by the Iſle, and run on both ſides of it, overflow almoſt the very Surface of the Earth of the ſaid Iſle, as well as the Land that lies on the Banks of the River to the Eaſt and Weſt, as it runs South and North. But we muſt obſerve, That at the end of the Iſle, on the ſide of the two great Falls, there is a ſlooping Rock which reaches as far as the Great Gulph, into which the ſaid Waters fall; and yet the Rock is not at all wetted by the two Caſcades which fall on both ſides, becauſe the two Torrents which are made by the Iſle, throw themſelves with a prodigious force, one towards the Eaſt, and the other towards the Weſt, from off the end of the Iſle, where the Great Fall of all is.

After then theſe two Torrents have thus run by the two ſides of the Iſle, they caſt their Waters all of a ſudden down into the Gulph by two great Falls; which Waters are puſh'd ſo violently on by their own Weight, and ſo ſuſtain'd by the ſwiftneſs of the motion, that they don't wet the Rock in the leaſt. And here it is that they tumble down into an Abyſs above 600 Foot in depth.

The Waters that flow on the ſide of the Eaſt, do not throw themſelves with that violence as thoſe that

that fall on the Weſt. The Reaſon is, becauſe the Rock at the end of the Iſland, riſes ſomething more on this ſide, than it does on the Weſt; and ſo the Waters being ſupported by it ſomewhat longer than they are on the other ſide, are carry'd the ſmoother off: But on the Weſt the Rock ſlooping more, the Waters, for want of a Support, become the ſooner broke, and fall with the greater precipitation. Another Reaſon is, the Lands that lie on the Weſt are lower than thoſe that lie on the Eaſt. We alſo obſerv'd, that the Waters of the Fall, that is to the Weſt, made a ſort of a ſquare Figure as they fell, which made a third Caſcade, leſs than the other two, which fell betwixt the South and North.

And becauſe there is a riſing Ground which lies before thoſe two Caſcades to the North, the Gulph is much larger there than to the Eaſt. Moreover, we muſt obſerve, that from the riſing Ground that lies over againſt the two laſt Falls which are on the Weſt of the main Fall, one may go down as far as the bottom of this terrible Gulph. The Author of this Diſcovery was down there, the more narrowly to obſerve the Fall of theſe prodigious Caſcades. From hence we could diſcover a Spot of Ground, which lay under the Fall of Water which is to the Eaſt, big enough for four Coaches to drive a-breaſt without being wet; but becauſe the Ground, which is to the Eaſt of the ſloping Rock, where the firſt Fall empties it ſelf into the Gulph, is very ſteep, and almoſt perpendicular, 'tis impoſſible for a Man to get down on that ſide, into the Place where the four Coaches may go a-breaſt, or to make his way through ſuch a quantity of Water as falls towards the Gulph: So that 'tis very probable, that to this dry Place it is that the Rattle-Snakes retire, by certain Paſſages which they find under Ground.

From the end then of this Iſland it is, that theſe two Great Falls of Waters, as alſo the third but now men-

mentioned, throw themſelves, after a moſt ſurprizing manner, down into a dreadful Gulph ſix hundred Foot and more in depth. I have already ſaid, That the Waters which Diſcharge themſelves at the Caſcade to the Eaſt, fall with leſſer force; whereas thoſe to the Weſt tumble all at once, making two Caſcades; one moderate, the other very violent and ſtrong, which at laſt make a kind of Crochet, or ſquare Figure, falling from South to North, and Weſt to Eaſt. After this, they rejoin the Waters of the other Caſcade that falls to the Eaſt, and ſo tumble down altogether, though unequally, into the Gulph, with all the violence that can be imagin'd, from a Fall of ſix hundred Foot, which makes the moſt Beautiful, and at the ſame time moſt frightful Caſcade in the World.

After theſe Waters have thus diſcharg'd themſelves into this dreadful Gulph, they begin to reſume their Courſe, and continue the great River of St. *Laurence* for two Leagues, as far as the three Mountains which are on the Eaſt of the River, and the great Rock which is on the Weſt, and lifts it ſelf three Fathoms above the Waters, or thereabouts. The Gulph into which theſe Waters are diſcharg'd, continues it ſelf thus two Leagues together, between a Chain of Rocks, flowing with a prodigious Torrent, which is bridled and kept in by the Rocks that lie on each ſide of the River.

Into this Gulph it is, that theſe ſeveral Caſcades empty themſelves, with a violence equal to the height from whence they fall, and the quantity of Waters which they diſcharge. Hence ariſe thoſe deafning Sounds, that dreadful roaring and bellowing of the Waters which drown the loudeſt Thunder, as alſo the perpetual Miſts that hang over the Gulph, and riſe above the talleſt Pines that are in the little Iſle ſo often mention'd. After a Channel is again made at the bottom of this dreadful Fall by the

the Chain of Rocks, and fill'd by that prodigious quantity of Waters which are continually falling, the River of St. *Laurence* reſumes its Courſe: But with that violence, and his Waters beat againſt the Rocks with ſo prodigious a force, that 'tis impoſſible to paſs even in a Canou of Bark, though in one of them a Man may venture ſafe enough upon the moſt rapid Streams, by keeping cloſe to the Shoar.

Theſe Rocks, as alſo the prodigious Torrent, laſt for two Leagues; that is, from the great Fall, to the three Mountains and great Rock: But then it begins inſenſibly to abate, and the Land to be again almoſt on a level with the Water; and ſo it continues as far as the Lake *Ontario*, or *Frontenac*.

When one ſtands near the Fall, and looks down into this moſt dreadful Gulph, one is ſeized with Horror, and the Head turns round, ſo that one cannot look long or ſtedfaſtly upon it. But this vaſt Deluge beginning inſenſibly to abate, and even to fall to nothing about the three Mountains, the Waters of the River St. *Laurence* begin to glide more gently along, and to be almoſt upon a level with the Lands; ſo that it becomes navigable again, as far as the Lake *Frontenac*, over which we paſs to come to the New Canal, which is made by the diſcharge of its Waters. Then we enter again upon the River St. *Laurence*, which not long after makes that which they call the *Long Fall*, an hundred Leagues from *Niagara*.

I have often heard talk of the Cataracts of the *Nile*, which make the People deaf that live near them. I know not whether the *Iroqueſe*, who formerly inhabited near this Fall, and liv'd upon the Beaſts which from time to time are born down by the violonce of its Torrent, withdrew themſelves from its Neighbourhood, leſt they ſhould likewiſe become deaf; or out of the continual fear they were in of Rattle-Snakes, which are very common

in

in this Place during the great Heats, and lodge in Holes all along the Rocks as far as the Mountains, which lie two Leagues lower.

Be it as it will, theſe dangerous Creatures are to be met with as far as the Lake *Frontenac*, on the South-ſide; but becauſe they are never to be ſeen but in the midſt of Summer, and then only when the Heats are exceſſive, they are not ſo afraid of them here as elſewhere. However, 'tis reaſonable to preſume, that the horrid noiſe of the Fall, and the fear of theſe poiſonous Serpents, might oblige the Savages to ſeek out a more commodious Habitation.

Having carry'd our Canow from the Great Fall of *Niagara*, as far as the three Mountains, which are two Leagues below, in all which Way we perceived never a Snake; we proceeded in our Voyage, and arriv'd at the Lake of *Ontario*, or *Frontenac*.

CHAP. LXXI.

The Author ſets out from the Fort which is at the Mouth of the River Niagara, *and obliges the* Iroqueſe *aſſembl'd in Council, to deliver up the Slaves they had made of the* Outtaouacts.

WE met none of the Savages in the little Village of the *Iroqueſe*, which is near the Mouth of the River *Niagara*; for they ſow there but very little *Indian* Corn; and inhabit the Village but in Harveſt-time, or in the Seaſon they go a fiſhing for Sturgeons, or Whiteings which are there in great plenty. We thought alſo we ſhould find ſome *Canadians* at the Fort of the River which we had begun to build, at the beginning of our Diſcovery: But theſe Forts were only built for a Show, to cover the ſecret Trade of Furrs, and countenance the great Hopes M. *de la Salle* had given to the *French* Court.

It

It muſt be granted, that ſuch Diſcoveries are beyond any private Mens Power, and they muſt be countenanc'd by a Sovereign Authority, to be ſucceſsful. Therefore M. *de la Salle* had got the *French* Court's Protection; but inſtead of making a good uſe of it for the publick Good, he did chiefly aim at his own private Intereſt, and for that reaſon neglected a great many things neceſſary to carry on his Enterprize. The Fort of the River of *Niagara* was become a deſerted Place, and might have ſerved to countenance his Deſign. We came along the Southern Coaſts of the Lake *Ontario*, or *Frontenac*; and after having ſailed thirty Leagues, we arrived about *Whitſontide* in the Year 1681. at the great Village of the *Tſonnontouans Iroqueſe.*

The Savages came to meet us, repeating often this Word *Otchitagon*, meaning by it, that the *Bare-foot* was returned from the great Voyage he had undertook, to viſit the Nations that are beyond the River *Hohio* and *Meſchaſipi*, and though our Faces were burnt by the Sun, and my Clothes patch'd up with wild Bull-Skins, yet they knew me, and carried me with my two Men into one of their Officer's Cottages.

They did call their Council, which met to the number of Thirty, or thereabouts, wearing their Gowns in a ſtately manner, made up with all ſorts of Skins, twiſted about their Arms, with the *Calumet* in their Hands. They gave order that we ſhould be entertained according to their own Faſhon, while they did ſmoak without eating.

After we had done eating, I told them by a *Canadian* that was my Interpreter, that their Warriors had brought 12 *Outtaouacts* as Slaves, though they were their Confederates and *Onontio*'s Friends, ('tis the Name they give to the Viceroy of *Canada*) breaking thereby the Peace, and proclaiming War againſt *Canada:* And the better to oblige them to deliver up to us the *Outtaouacts*, who by good Fortune were ſtill alive, we flung in the middle of the

Aſſembly

Aſſembly two Collars of Porcelain, that Captain *Talon* had given us; This is the only way among them, to enter upon any Affair.

The next day the Council met, and the *Iroqueſe* anſwer'd me with ſome other Collars of Porcelain; and told me, That thoſe who had made theſe Men Slaves, were young Warriors without Conſideration; That we might aſſure *Onontio*, (who was then Count *Frontenac*) that their Nation would always reſpect him in all things; That they ſhould live with him as true Children with their Father, and that they would deliver up the Men who had been taken.

Teganeot, one of the chiefeſt, who ſpoke for the whole Nation in the Council, preſented me with ſome Skins of Otter, Martin, and Bever, to the value of thirty Crowns. I took his Preſent with one Hand, and deliver'd it with the other to his Son, whom he lov'd tenderly. I told him, That I made him that Preſent, that he might Exchange it with ſome Merchandizes of *Europe*; and that the *Bare-feet* will accept of no Preſent at all, not out of Contempt, but becauſe we are diſintereſted in all things; aſſuring him, I would acquaint the Governor with his Friendſhip.

The *Iroqueſe* was ſurprized that I did not accept of his Preſent; and ſeeing beſides, that I gave a little Looking-Glaſs to his Son, he ſaid to thoſe of his Nation, that the other *Canadians* were not of that Temper: And they ſent us ſeveral Fowls, as an acknowledgment of their Gratitude for the care we took, to teach their Children ſome Prayers in their own Tongue. After the Promiſes the Savages gave us to live in good correſpondency with us, we took our leave of them, and got our ſelves ready, in order to continue our Voyage.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXII.

The Author ſets out from the Tſonnontouans Iroqueſe, *and comes to Fort* Frontenac.

I Muſt confeſs it is a great Pleaſure for one to come out of Slavery, or the Hands of Savages, and to reflect upon paſt Miſeries; eſpecially when he returns among Friends, to reſt himſelf after ſo many Hardſhips and Troubles.

We had ſtill about Fourſcore Leagues to go upon the Lake *Ontario*, before we could arrive at Fort *Catarokoui*, or *Frontenac*; but we were all the Way very merry. I had help'd *Picard du Gay* and *Michael Ako*, my Fellow-Travellers, with ſome Skins, to make amends for the Hardſhip and Pains they ſuffer'd in that Voyage. We had much ado to row off our Canow, it being much bigger than that we made uſe of when we ſet out from the *Iſſati* and *Nadoueſſians*; but nevertheleſs we came in four Days to the Fort, and kill'd in our way ſome Buſtards and Teals. We wanted then neither Powder nor Shot, and therefore we ſhot at random all that we met, either ſmall Birds, or Turtles, and Wood-Pigeons, which were then coming from Foreign Countries in ſo great Numbers, that they did appear in the Air like Clouds.

I obſerved upon this Occaſion, and many other times during our Voyage, a thing worthy of Admiration: The Birds that were flying at the Head of the others, keep often back, to eaſe and help thoſe among them that are tir'd; which may be a Leſſon to Men to help one another in time of need. Father *Luke Buiſſet*, and Sergeant *la Fleur*, who had the Command in the Fort in the Abſence of M. *la Salle*, received us in the Houſe of our Order, that we had built together.

They

They were much ſurpriz'd to ſee us, having been told that the Savages had hanged me with St. *Francis*'s Rope two Years ago. All the Inhabitants of *Canada*, and the Savages that we had encouraged to live near Fort *Frontenac*, to Till the Ground, made me an extraordinary Reception, aud ſhew'd much Joy to ſee me again. The Savages put their Hand upon their Mouth, and repeated often this Word, *Otkon*, meaning, That the *Bare-foot* muſt be a Spirit, having travell'd ſo far, through ſo many Nations that would have kill'd them, if they had been there. Tho' we were kindly us'd in this Fort, yet my Men had a great Mind to return into *Canada*; and having eſcap'd ſo many Dangers together, I was willing to make an End of the Voyage with them; therefore we took leave of Father *Luke Buiſſet*, and of all our Friends that liv'd in that Fort, and went for *Quebec*.

CHAP. LXXIII.

The Author ſets out from Fort Frontenac, *and paſſes over the rapid Stream, which is call'd,* The Long Fall. *He is kindly receiv'd at* Montreal *by Count* Frontenac.

WE ſet out from the Fort ſooner than I thought, not being able to keep any longer my Men, and in our Way took a more exact View of the Mouth of the Lake *Ontario*, or *Frontenac*. This Place is call'd *Thouſand Iſlands*, becauſe there are ſo many of them, that 'tis impoſſible to tell them. The Stream is here very rapid; but its Swiftneſs is prodigiouſly increas'd, by the great Quantity of Waters that come from the other Lakes above-mention'd, and a great many Rivers that run into this, in the Place call'd *The Long Fall*, which makes it as dreadful as the great Fall of *Niagara*.

But

But beſides this great Quantity of Waters, and the Declivity of the Channel, which makes the Current ſo rapid, there are alſo on the Banks, and in the middle of the River of St. *Laurence*, about Eight or Ten Leagues below the ſaid Lake, great Rocks, which appear above Water, which ſtopping the Stream of the River, makes as great a Noiſe as the great Fall of *Niagara*.

This dreadful Encounter of Water that beats ſo furiouſly againſt theſe Rocks, continues about two Leagues, the Waters ſpurt up ten or twelve Yards high, and appear like huge Snow-Balls, Hail, and Rain, with dreadful Thunder, and a Noiſe like Hiſſing and Howling of Fierce Beaſts: And I do certainly believe, that if a Man continued there a conſiderable time, he would become Deaf, without any Hope of Cure.

My Men refuſing to carry by Land the Canou, and the Skins they had got, I was forc'd to adventure with them; which I did willingly, having formerly paſs'd theſe Streams in a Canou: I truſted my ſelf again to the ſame GOD who had deliver'd me from ſo many great Dangers. The Stream is ſo rapid, that we could not tell the Trees that were on the Bank, and yet there was hardly room for our Canou to paſs between the Rocks. We were carried away by theſe horrid Currents above two great Leagues in a very ſhort time; and in two Days we came from *Frontenac* to *Montreal*, which are about Threeſcore Leagues diſtant one from another. Before our landing at *Montreal*, my Men deſir'd me to leave them with the Skins in a neighbouring Iſland, to ſave ſome Duties, or rather to keep off from M. *la Salle*'s Creditors, who would have ſeized the Commodities they had got in their long Voyage with me in our great Diſcovery.

Count *Frontenac*, who was at *Montreal* looking out of a Window, ſaw me alone in a Canou, and took me

for Father *Luke Fillatre*, one of our *Recollects*, who ſerved him as Chaplain. But one of his Guards, knowing me again, went to him, and acquainted him with my coming; he was ſo kind as to come to meet me, and made me the beſt Reception that a Miſſionary might expect from a Perſon of that Rank and Quality. He thought I had been murthered by the Savages two Years ago. He was at firſt ſurprized, thinking I was ſome other *Recollect* that came from *Virginia:* But at laſt he knew me, and gave me a very kind Entertainment.

This Lord did wonder to ſee me ſo much altered, being lean, tired, and tanned, having loſt my Cloak that the *Iſſati* had ſtolen from me, being then cloath'd in an old Habit, patched up with pieces of wild Bulls-Skins. He carried me to his own Houſe, where I continued for twelve Days to refreſh my ſelf. He forbad all his Servants to give me any thing to eat, without his expreſs Order, becauſe he was afraid I ſhould fall ſick if I was left to my own Diſcretion, to eat as much as I would after ſo long Hardſhips; and he gave me himſelf what he thought was beſt.

He was much pleaſed to hear me talk of all the Hazards I had run in ſo long a Voyage among ſo many different Nations. I repreſented to him what great Advantages might be got by our Diſcovery: But having obſerved that he was always repeating the ſame Queſtions he asked me the firſt Day I was with him, I told him I had acquainted him with what I knew; and that I did not queſtion but M. *la Salle*, who was to go to the Court of *France* about his Affairs, had acquainted him with all the Particulars of our Voyage, having been in our Company till he was forced to leave us to return into *Canada.*

I knew that M. *la Salle* was a Man that would never forgive me, if I had told all that I knew of our Voyage; therefore I kept ſecret the whole Diſcovery we had made of the River *Meſchaſipi.* My Men were as

as much concerned as I, in concealing our Voyage; for they had been certainly puniſhed for having undertaken it againſt Orders; and the Skins they had got in their return from the *Iſſati* with M. *du Luth*, who did ſtay for that reaſon among the *Outtaouacts*, had likewiſe been confiſcated.

Count *Frontenac* ſhewed me in private a Letter M. *du Luth* had ſent him by a *Huron*, who lived in the Neighbourhood of the *Outtaouacts*, by which he acquainted him, he could never learn any thing about our Voyage, neither from me, nor from the Men who attended me. I could not forbear then to tell him, that M. *du Luth* was not ſo much devoted to his Service as he thought; and that I might aſſure him that ſome Men that were his Opponents, had ſtopped M. *du Luth*'s Mouth; and that I was fully perſuaded he had been ſent by them with a ſecret Order, to pump me; but I was bound by my Character, and in Charity, to ſpare thoſe Men, tho' on many Occaſions they had not dealt ſo juſtly with me; but I was willing to leave all to God, who *will render to every one according to his Works*.

Francis de Laval, the firſt Lord Biſhop of *Quebec*, came along the River *St. Laurence*, to make his Viſitation, while I was coming to *Quebeck* with the Lord *Frontenac*. We met him near Fort *Champlein*, which had been fortified, to put a Stop to the Inroads of the *Iroqueſe*: The Lord *Frontenac* asked me, if I had got an Ague; and then looking upon thoſe that attended him, he ſaid, that the feeling of the Pulſe increaſed the Fever; inſinuating to me thereby, that there was a Deſign laid againſt me, to get out cunningly what I kept ſecret in my Heart.

After a ſhort Converſation with the Biſhop, I ask'd his Epiſcopal Bleſſing, tho' I did not think fit to reveal to him all that I knew of our Diſcoveries. We were going to diſcourſe more largely upon this Subject, when the Lord *Frontenac* came in, to invite the

Biſhop to Dine with him, and thereby to give me an opportunity to put an end to our Converſation.

I was much puzzled in the Company of theſe two Great Men, the Biſhop was the Chief of the Company; but I was yet to pay a great Reſpect to the Lord *Frontenac*. I did avoid talking of Matters that might be troubleſome to me; and I told the Biſhop, that the Lord *Frontenac* had preſcribed me a Courſe of Diet, leſt I ſhould fall ſick, after all the Hardſhips I had endured, and the bad Food I fed upon among the Savages; therefore I deſired him to give me leave to return to *Quebec*, that I might live there in private; for I was not able then to Catechiſe the Children, nor to perform any Functions of a Miſſionary in his Viſitation; and that I wanted ſome Reſt, that I might work more vigorouſly afterwards. By theſe Means I avoided a Converſation with the Biſhop, that would have proved very troubleſome to me; for he gave me leave to retire to our Monaſtery, to reſt there after all my Fatigues.

CHAP. LXXIV.

A great Defeat of the Illinois, *that were attacked and ſurprized by the* Iroqueſe.

WHile I was reſting after my great Labours, the Lord *Frontenac* did receive Letters from Father *Zenobe Mambre*, whom I left among the *Illinois*. He ſent him Word, that the *Iroqueſe* had drawn the *Miamis* into their Party; and that being joined together, they had formed a great Army, and were fall'n on a ſudden upon the *Illinois*, to deſtroy that Nation; and that they were got together to the number of Nine hundred, all Fuſiliers; theſe two Nations being well provided with Guns, and all ſort of Ammunitions of War, by the Commerce they have with the *Europeans*.

The

The *Iroqueſe* were projecting this Enterprize about the 12th of *September*, 1680. while I was about the Diſcovery of the River *Meſchaſipi*. The *Illinois* did not miſtruſt them; for they had concluded a Treaty of Peace with theſe two Nations; and M. *la Salle* had aſſur'd them, that he would do his utmoſt Endeavours to oblige them to obſerve the Treaty; therefore the *Illinois* were eaſily ſurprized, having ſent moſt part of their Youth to make War in another Country.

A *Chaouanon*, Confederate to the *Illinois*, returning from their Country home, came back again, to give them notice that he had diſcovered an Army of *Iroqueſe* and *Miamis*, who were already entered into their Country on purpoſe to ſurprize them.

This News frighted the *Illinois*; yet the next Day they appeared in the Field, and marched directly to the Enemy; and as ſoon as they were in ſight, they charged them. The Fight was very ſharp, and a great many Men were killed on both ſides.

M. *Tonti*, whom M. *la Salle* had left in the Fort of *Crevecœur*, to command there in his Abſcence, hearing of this Irruption, was in fear for the *Illinois*'s ſake; for though their Army was more numerous than that of their Enemy, yet they had no Guns; therefore he offer'd himſelf to go *Askenon*, that is *Mediator*, carrying the *Calumet* of Peace in his Hand, in order to bring them to an Agreement.

The *Iroqueſe* finding more reſiſtance than they thought at firſt, and ſeeing that the *Illinois* were reſolved to continue the War, conſented to a Treaty of Peace, accepting M. *Tonti*'s Mediation, and hearkened to the Propoſals he made them from the *Illinois*, who had choſen him for Mediator.

M. *Tonti* repreſented to them, that the *Illinois* were *Onontio*'s ('tis the Name they give to the Viceroy of *Canada*) Children and Confederates as well as themſelves; and that it would be very unpleaſant to him, who loved them all, to hear that they had begun the

War; therefore he earneſtly intreated them to return home, and trouble the *Illinois* no further, ſeeing they had religiouſly obſerved the Treaty of Peace.

Theſe Propoſals did not pleaſe ſome of the young *Iroqueſe*, who had a great mind to Fight, and therefore charged on a ſudden M. *Tonti* and his Men with ſeveral Shots; and a deſperate young Fellow of the Country of *Onnontaghe*, gave him a Wound with a Knife, near the Heart; but by chance a Rib warded off the Stroke: Several others did fall upon him, and would take him away; but one taking notice of his Hat, and that his Ears were not bored, knew thereby that he was not an *Illinois*, and for that reaſon an old Man cried out, That they ſhould ſpare him; and flung to him a Collar of Porcelain, meaning thereby to make him Satisfaction for the Blood he had loſt, and the Wound he had received.

A young Man of the *Iroqueſe*'s Crew, took M. *Tonti*'s Hat, and hung it on his Gun, to fright the *Illinois* therewith; who thinking by that Signal that *Tonti*, Father *Zenobe*, and all the *Europeans* that were in his Company, had been kill'd by the *Iroqueſe*, were ſo much ſurprized and diſquieted with that horrid Attempt, that they fancied themſelves delivered up into the Hands of their Enemies, and were upon running away: Yet the *Iroqueſe* having made a Signal to Father *Zenobe* to draw near, that they might confer with him about the means to prevent both Armies to come to fight, they received the *Calumet* of Peace, and made a Motion as if they had a mind to withdraw: But the *Illinois* were hardly come to their Village, before that they ſaw the *Iroqueſe*'s Army appearing upon ſome Hills, which were over-againſt them.

This Motion obliged Father *Zenobe*, at the *Illinois*'s Requeſt, to go to them to know the reaſon of a Proceeding ſo contrary to what they had done in accepting of the *Calumet* of Peace. But that Embaſſy did not pleaſe thoſe Barbarians, who would not loſe

ſo

ſo fair an Opportunity. Father *Zenobe* did run the hazard of being murthered by theſe unmerciful Men; yet the ſame God who had preſerved many of our Fellow-Miſſionaries in the like Encounters, and my ſelf in this Diſcovery, kept him from the Hand of theſe furious Men. He was a Man of a ſhort Stature, but very couragious, and went boldly among the *Iroqueſe*, who received him very civilly.

They told him, that the Want they were reduced to, had forced them to this new Step, having no Proviſions for their Army, and their great Number having driven away the Wild-Bulls from that Country. Father *Zenobe* brought their Anſwer to the *Illinois*, who preſently ſent them ſome *Indian* Corn, and all things neceſſary for their Subſiſtence, and propos'd to them a Treaty of Commerce, having in that Country a great plenty of Beaver's Skins, and other Furrs.

The *Iroqueſe* accepted of theſe Propoſals; they did exchange Hoſtages, and Father *Zenobe* went into their Camp, and did lie there, to loſe no time to bring all Matters to an Agreement, and conclude a Treaty between them. But the *Iroqueſe* repairing in great Numbers into the Quarters of the *Illinois*, who ſuſpected no ill Deſign, they advanced as far as their Village, where they waſted the *Mauſolæums* that they uſed to raiſe to their Dead, which are commonly ſeven or eight Foot high: They ſpoil'd the *Indian* Corn that was ſown; and having deceived the *Illinois*, under a falſe pretence of Peace, fortified themſelves in their Village.

In this Confuſion the *Iroqueſe* joined with the *Miamis*, carried away eight hundred *Illionois* Women and Children; and their Fury went ſo far, that theſe *Antropophages* did eat ſome Old Men of that Nation, and burnt ſome others who were not able to follow them, and ſo returned with the Slaves they had made, to their own Habitations, which were four hundred Leagues off the Country they had ſo cruelly plundered.

Upon the firſt News of the Approach of the *Iroqueſe*, the *Illinois* had ſent moſt part of their Families to the other ſide of a little Hill, to ſecure them from their Fury, and that they might get over the River *Meſchaſipi*; and the others that were fit for War, did flock together on the Tops of the Hills that were near their Habitations, and then went to the other ſide of the River, to look after their Families, and provide for their Subſiſtence.

After this perfidious Expedition, theſe Barbarians would fain alledge ſome Pretences to excuſe their Treachery, and would perſuade our Fathers to retire from the *Illinois*'s Country, ſince they were all fled away; and that there was no likelihood they ſhould want them for the future to teach them their Prayers, as the *Atſientatſi*, or the Black-Gowns do in their Countries, meaning the Jeſuits, whom they call by that Name. They told Fathers *Gabriel* and *Zenobe*, that they ſhould do better to return into *Canada*, and that they would attempt nothing againſt the Life of the Children of *Onontio*, Governor of *Canada*, deſiring to have a Letter under their Hand, to ſhew it as a Teſtimony of their honeſt proceeding in this occaſion, and aſſuring them that they would no more ſtand by their Enemies.

Our two Fathers being ſo forſaken by their Hoſts, and finding themſelves expoſed to the Fury of a Cruel and Victorious Enemy, reſolved to return home, according to the *Iroqueſe* Advice; and being ſuppli'd by them with a Canow, they embarked for *Canada*.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXV.

The Savages Kikapoux *murther Father* Gabriel de la Ribourde, *a Recollect Miſſionary.*

GOD has given me the Grace to be inſenſible of the Wrong I have ſuffer'd from my Enemies, and to be thankful for the Kindneſſes I have receiv'd from my Friends. But if ever I had reaſon to be thankful to thoſe that have taken care of my Inſtruction, certainly I muſt confeſs it was to this good Father *Gabriel*, who was my Maſter during my Novitiate in the Monaſtery of our Order at *Bethune*, in the Province of *Artois*; therefore I think, that I am bound in Duty to mention ſo Honeſt a Man in this Relation of my Diſcovery, eſpecially having had ſo ſad a Share therein, as to be murder'd by the Savages *Kikapoux*, as I will relate it.

It muſt be obſerv'd, That M. *Tonti* could ſtay no longer at Fort *Crevecœur*, after the *Illinois* Defeat; therefore he deſir'd Fathers *Gabriel* and *Zenobe* to get, with two young Boys that were left there, into a Canou, and return into *Canada*. All the reſt of the Inhabitants had deſerted that Country ſince that unfortunate Accident, by the Suggeſtion of ſome Men of *Canada*, who were the Predominant *Genius* of the Country, who had flatter'd them with great Hopes, to oblige them to forſake M. *de la Salle*'s Deſign.

Our ſaid Fathers being ſo forc'd to leave that Country after ſuch a Defeat, embark'd the 18th of *September* following, wanting all ſorts of Proviſions, except what they could kill with their Guns; but being arriv'd about eight Leagues from the *Illinois*, their Canou touching upon a Rock, let in Water, and ſo were forc'd to land about Noon to mend it.

While

While they were about careening the ſame, Father *Gabriel*, charm'd with the fine Meadows, the little Hills, and the pleaſant Groves in that Country, which are diſpers'd at ſuch diſtances, that they look as if they had been planted on purpoſe to adorn the Country, went ſo far into thoſe Woods, that he loſt his Way. At Night Father *Zenobe* went to look after him, as all the reſt of the Company; for he was generally lov'd by all that knew him. But M. *Tonti* was ſuddenly ſeiz'd with panick Fears, thinking that every moment the *Iroqueſe* would fall upon him: So that he ſent for Father *Zenobe*, and forc'd all his Men to retire into the Canou, and ſo got over the River on the *Illinois*-ſide, and left the Old Father expos'd to the Barbarians Inſults, without any reſpect to his Age, or to his Perſonal Merits.

'Tis true, that in the Evening one of the Young Men that were in the Canou with Father *Zenobe*, fir'd a Gun by M. *Tonti*'s Order, and lighted a great Fire; but all was in vain.

The next Day, M. *Tonti* ſeeing he had behav'd himſelf cowardly on this occaſion, went back again by break of Day to the Place where we had left the Day before Father *Gabriel*, and continu'd there till Noon looking after the poor Chriſtian. But though ſome of his Men enter'd into the Groves, where they ſaw the freſh Steps of a Man, which were alſo printed in the Meadows along the Bank of the River, they could never hear of him. M. *Tonti* ſaid ſince, to excuſe himſelf for having ſo baſely forſaken Father *Gabriel*, That he thought the *Iroqueſe* had laid an Ambuſcade to ſurprize him; for they had ſeen him flying away, and they might fancy he had declar'd himſelf for the *Illinois*.

Fut M. *Tonti* might have remember'd he had given his Letters for *Canada* to theſe *Iroqueſe*; and that if they had form'd any Deſign upon his Life, they

they would have executed it when he was among them: But they were ſo far from it, that when he was wounded, they preſented him with a Collar of Porcelain, which they never do but when ſome unlucky Accidents happen. The Savages don't uſe ſo much circumſpection; and therefore this Excuſe is groundleſs and frivolous. Father *Zenobe* has left us in Writing, That he would ſtay for Father *Gabriel*: But M. *Tonti* forc'd him to embark at Three a Clock in the Afternoon; ſaying, That certainly he had been kill'd by the Enemies, or elſe he was gone a-foot along the Banks of the River; and that they would ſee him in their way. However, they could hear nothing of him; and the farther they went, the greater Father *Zenobe*'s Afflictions grew. They were then in ſuch a want of Proviſions, that they had nothing to feed upon but Potatoes, Wild Garlick, and ſome ſmall Roots they had ſcratch'd out of the Ground with their own Fingers.

We have heard ſince, that Father *Gabriel* had been kill'd a little while after his landing. The Nation of the *Kikapoux*, who, as one may ſee in our Map, inhabit to the Weſtward of the Bay of *Puans*, had ſent their Youth to make War againſt the *Iroqueſe*; but hearing that theſe Barbarians were got into the Country of the *Illinois*, they went ſeeking about to ſurprize them. Three *Kikapoux*, making the Vanguard, met with Father *Gabriel*, and came up to him as near as they could, hiding themſelves among the Graſs, which is very high in that Country; and tho' they knew he was not an *Iroqueſe*, yet they knock'd him down with their Clubs, call'd *Head-breakers*, which are made of a very hard Wood. They left his Body on the ſpot, and carried away his Breviary and Journal, which ſince came to the Hands of a Jeſuite, whom I will mention in my other Volume, wherein I deſign to ſpeak of the Firſt Introduction

of

of the Faith into *Canada*. Theſe Barbarians took off the Skin of his Head, and carried it in triumph to their Village, giving out that it was the Hair of an *Iroqueſe*, whom they had kill'd.

Thus di'd the Good Old Man; to whom we may apply what the Scripture ſays of thoſe whom *Herod* in his Fury caus'd to be Slain; *Non erat qui ſepeliret*; There was no Body to Bury him. This Worthy Man was wont in the Leſſons he made us in our Noviti[illegible]e, to prepare us againſt the like Accidents by Mortifications: And it ſeems that he had ſome foreſight of what befel him. So Good a Man deſerv'd a Better Fate, if a Better might be wiſh'd for, than to die in the Functions of an Apoſtolical Miſſion, by the Hands of thoſe ſame Nations, to whom the Divine Providence had ſent him to convert them.

Father *Gabriel* was about 65 Years old. He had not only liv'd an examplary Life, ſuch as our Good Fathers do, but had alſo perform'd all the Duties of the Employments he had in that Order, either when he was at home Guardian, Superior, Inferior, and Maſter of the Novices; or abroad when he was in *Canada*, where he continued from the Year 1670, until his Death. I underſtood ſeveral times by his Diſcourſes, that he was much oblig'd to the *Flemings*, who had maintain'd him a long time: He often talk'd to us about it, to inſpire us, by his Example, with ſome Sentiments of Gratitude towards our Benefactors. I have ſeen him mov'd with Grief, conſidering that ſo many Nations liv'd in the Ignorance of the Way to Salvation; and he was willing to loſe his Life, to deliver them out of their Stupidity.

The *Iroqueſe* ſaid of him, That he had been brought to Bed, becauſe his Great Belly was become flat by his frequent Faſtings, and the Auſterity of his Life.

M. *Tonti* can never clear himſelf of his Baſeneſs, for forſaking Father *Gabriel*, under pretence of being afraid of the *Iroqueſe*: For though they are a Wild Nation, yet they lov'd that Good Old Man, who had been often among them: But M. *Tonti* might bear him ſome ſecret Grudge; becauſe Father *Gabriel*, after the *Illinois* Defeat, ſeeing that M. *Tonti* had over-laden the Canou with Beavers-Skins; ſo that there was no room for him, he did throw many of theſe Skins to the *Iroqneſe*, to ſhew them that he was not come into that Country to get Skins or other Commodities.

Father *Zenobe* had neither Credit nor Courage enough to perſuade M. *Tonti* to ſtay a while for that Good Father, who was thus ſacrific'd to ſecure ſome Beavers-Skins. I do not doubt but the Death of that *venerable* Old Man was very precious in the ſight of God, and I hope it will produce one time or other its Effects, when it ſhall pleaſe God to ſet forth his Mercy towards theſe Wild Nations; and I do wiſh it might pleaſe him to make uſe of a feeble Means, as I am, to finiſh what I have, through His Grace, and with Labour, ſo happily begun.

CHAP. LXXVI.

The Author's Return from his Diſcovery, to Quebec; *and what hapned at his Arrival at the Convent of Our* Lady of Angels *near that Town.*

COunt *Frontenac*, Viceroy of *Canada*, gave me two of his Guards, who underſtood very well to manage a Canou, to carry me to *Quebec*. We ſet out from *Champlein*'s Fort, mention'd above; and being near the Town, I landed, and went a-foot through the Lands newly grubb'd up, to our Monaſtery, bidding the Guards to carry the Canou along with them.

I would

I would not land at *Quebec*, becauſe the Biſhop had given order to his Vicar-General to receive me in his Epiſcopal Palace, that he might have more time to enquire about our great Diſcovery: But Count *Frontenac* had expreſly order'd his Major that was in the Town, to prevent that Meeting, and to take care that I might firſt be brought to our Monaſtery, to confer with Father *Valentin de Roux*, a Man of great underſtanding, and Provincial-Commiſſary of the Recollects in *Canada*.

There was then in our Monaſtery of our *Lady of Angels*, but Three Miſſionaries with the ſaid Commiſſary; all the reſt were diſpers'd up and down in ſeveral Miſſions above a hundred Leagues from *Quebec*. One may eaſily imagine that I was welcome to our Monaſtery; Father *Hilarion Jeunet* ſeem'd ſurpriz'd, and told him with a ſmiling Countenance, *Lazare veni foras*. Whereupon I ask'd him why he did apply to me what had been ſaid of *Lazarus?* To which he anſwer'd, that two Years ago a Maſs of *Requiem* had been ſung for me in the Monaſtery, becauſe ſome Savages had given out for certain, to a Black Gown, *i. e.* a Jeſuite, That the Nation whom the *Iroqueſe* call *Hontouagaha*, had hung me to a Tree with St. *Francis*'s Rope; and that two Men who accompani'd me, had been alſo in a very cruel manner put to Death by the ſame Savages.

Here I muſt confeſs, That all Men have their Friends and their Enemies. There are ſome Men who, like the Fire that blackens the Wood it cannot burn, muſt needs raiſe Stories againſt their Neighbours; and therefore ſome having not been able to get me into their Party, ſpread abroad this Rumour of my Death, to ſtain my Reputation; and that Noiſe had given occaſion to ſeveral Diſcourſes in *Canada* to my prejudice. However, (for I will, if it pleaſe God, declare my Mind farther upon this matter

matter in another Volume) I ought to acknowledge that God has preſerv'd me by a ſort of Miracle, in this great and dangerous Voyage, of which you have an Account in this Volume. And when I think on it with attention, I am perſuaded that Providence has kept me for publiſhing to the World the Great Diſcoveries I have made in Eleven Years time, or thereabouts, that I have liv'd in the *Weſt-Indies.*

It muſt be obſerv'd, That a great many Men meddle with Buſineſs that don't belong to them, and will conceive a Jealouſy againſt thoſe that won't conform to their Humour. The Provincial-Commiſſary, of whom I have ſpoken before, was very urgent to have a Copy of the Journal of the Diſcovery I had made in a Voyage of almoſt four Years, telling me he would keep it ſecret. I took his Word; for I thought, and I think ſtill, he was a Man of Honour and Probity. Beſides, I did conſider that he could inſtruct the Biſhop of *Quebec*, and Count *Frontenac*, with what they had a mind to know of this Diſcovery, and ſatisfy them both without expoſing my ſelf.

For this purpoſe were intended all the Care he took of me, and all the extraordinary Civilities he did ſhew me, in entertaining me with all he could get then, and calling me often the *Rais'd again.* He deſir'd me to return into *Europe*, to acquaint the Publick with the great Diſcoveries I had made, and that by this way I ſhould avoid the Jealouſy of theſe two Men; that it was very difficult to pleaſe two Maſters, whoſe Employment and Intereſts were ſo different.

He had then, before my Return into *Europe*, all the time that was neceſſary to Copy out my whole Voyage on the River *Meſchaſipi*, which I had undertook againſt M. *de la Salle*'s Opinion, who has made ſince a Voyage from the *Illionis* to the Gulph of

of *Mexico*, in the Year 1682. and two Years after me. He had had ſome ſuſpicion I had made that Voyage; yet he could not know the Truth of it at my Return to Fort *Frontenac*, becauſe he had then undertook a Voyage to the *Outtagamis*, not knowing whether the Savages had murther'd me, as it had been given out.

I follow'd our Commiſſary's Advice, and the Reſolution to return into *Europe*; but before I ſet out, I ſhew'd him that it was abſolutely neceſſary for the Settlement of Colonies in our Diſcoveries, and make ſome progreſs towards the eſtabliſhing of the Goſpel, to keep all theſe ſeveral Nations in peace, even the moſt remote, and aſſiſt them againſt the *Iroqueſe*, who are their Common Enemies: That theſe Barbarians never make a True Peace with thoſe that they have once beaten, or they hope to overcome, in ſpreading Diviſions among them; that the common Maxim of the *Iroqueſe* had always been ſuch, and by this means they had deſtroy'd above Two Millions of Souls.

The Provincial-Commiſſary agreed with me upon all this, and told me that for the future he ſhould give me all the neceſſary Inſtructions for that purpoſe.

I will give an Account, if it pleaſe God, in my *Second Volume*, of the Ways and Meaſures that are to be taken for the eſtabliſhing of the Faith among the many Nations of ſo different Languages; and how good Colonies might be ſetled in thoſe great Countries, which might be call'd the Delights of *America*, and become one of the greateſt Empires in the World.

F I N I S.